



525 #1621

Thomas F. Torrance

---

John Ball,  
a Short Treatise

a Short Catechisme.

with an Exposition  
upon the Same.

No title page

Editions in 1629, 1631  
1635, 1637

SCS #162

Pro. Stewart  
1600

69

To the Christian Reader.

**W**E offer here unto thy view  
(good Christian Reader) the  
principles of Religion, with a  
short Exposition upon the same  
for the explanation of what may seeme di-  
fficult, the confirmatiō of the truth profes-  
sed against Popery, and the inforcing of  
sundry duties of weightie and great im-  
portance. The method we have followed is  
plaine and naturall; the matter wholesome,  
but not adorned with flowers of eloquence.  
We begin with the maine end that all men  
ought to aime at: because there can be no  
motion but for some end, as there can be  
no effect but from some efficient. Thence we  
proceed to the meanes wherby the end may  
bee attained: for it is in vaine to propound  
an end unto our selves, if either the way be  
impossible, or imperfect; if either it cannot  
bee knowne, or doe not lead to the fruition  
thereof. In the meanes we consider; whence  
direction is to be taken, and what is to be  
learned: and there we shew what, and who  
God is, how wee must conceive of him,  
why hee ought to be worshipped, what cove-  
nant he made with Adam in the time of in-  
nocencie, and how Adam by transgression  
fell, and plunged himselfe, and his posterity

## To the Christian Reader.

into woe and miserie unspeakeable, intol-  
erable, and eternall. In the next place we  
lay downe the meanes, that God hath or-  
dained for mans recoverie; And there is  
handed what Christ is, what he hath done  
for us, how wee are made partakers of his  
benefits, how faith is wrought and increa-  
sed in us, & what obediance we owe to God  
in Christ, who is the object of Christian re-  
ligion. And because the Godly in this course  
of Christianity are compassed about with  
infirmities, subiect to many falles, and as-  
saulted with many tentations, which might  
discourage and turne them out of the way,  
therefore we have added, what course a  
Christian should take to grow in grace, how  
he may bee preserved from falling, how hee  
should recover after his fall, and of what  
priviledges the Godly are, or may be parta-  
kers, in this life. And in the last place, the  
blessednes of the Saints after this life is en-  
ded, is touched in few words; wherby the suf-  
ficiency of the meanes is manifested. For as  
it is a way prescribed of God, so it leadeth  
us unto God, the first, chief, & al-sufficiēt  
good. Our first herein is to teach the simple  
Christian, how he may grow from grace to  
grace, and from faith to faith: and fur-  
ther such godly Housholders, as desire to in-  
struct

## To the Christian Reader.

struēt and traine up their children and ser-  
vants in the information and feare of the  
Lord, but want leisure, or ability, to fur-  
nish themselves out of larger and more lear-  
ned Treatises. For their sakes we have ad-  
ventured to compile this poore Treatise, &  
make it cōmon, that they might have some  
helpe at hand, wherby they might be confir-  
med in the truth, against the vaine cavils of  
the Papists, & the better inabled to inform  
them that be cōmitted to their charge. If a-  
ny such shall vouchsafe to make use of this  
book, we would desire him to mark, and ob-  
serve these few things. First that the letters  
a, and b, and c, &c. set over the Answer,  
do direct, what part of the Answer the Te-  
stimonies of Scripture alledged do serve  
to confirme. And the figures. 1. 2. 3. &c.  
doe intimate what words, or which parts of  
the Answer are explained in the expositi-  
on. Secondly, in teaching the Questions and  
Answers, take the paines to search into the  
proofes which are alleadged for confirm a-  
tion of the matter; and if the same things,  
word for word be not found in the Verses of  
Scripture cited, then be pleased further to  
inquire what reasons or arguments may be  
drawn from the place, to prove what is in-  
tēded. This we cōmend, because it is a course

## To the Christian Reader.

hovefull for the obtayning of wel-grounded knowledge, the getting of stedfast and assured faith and comfort, and growing to bee familiarly acquainted with the Word. Thirdly, in reading the Exposition of every Answer, take notice what is delivered by way of explication or confirmation, and what reasons, and how many, are brought to prove any point. Thereby a man shall bee enabled to referre that which he heareth in the publike assembly, or readeth in Godly and learned Bookes, to some head, apply it to right purpose, treasure it up safe in memorie for use in the time of need, and have in readinesse to answer the gain-sayers.

Thus heartily desiring and hoping (good Reader) that thou wilt make use of these directions given, profitably to guide thee through this small worke; wee commit thee to God, and the word of his grace, who is able to direct, and safely lead thee unto eternall happinesse; craving that if thou receive benefit from God upon the perusall of this simple Treatise, thou be carefull to poure out thy soule unto God for us, that hee would enrich us with his grace more and more, for the glorie of God, the good of his Church, and the comfort of our owne soules.

**A Generall Table of the chiefe  
and principall heads of Do-  
ctrine handled in this  
B O O K E.**

**W**hat it is to glorifie God, and why  
man should be carefull thereof con-  
tinually, page. 1. and 11. 117.

Why every man should be care-  
full of his salvation, page. 1. 3.

The word of God alone doth teach the way  
to life eternall, page. 3. 4.

The word of God is now fully contained in  
writing, and is called the Scripture, and the ho-  
ly Scripture, page. 4. 5.

The Scripture is given by inspiration, p. 5. 6.

Of the bookes of holy Scripture, pag. 6. 7.

Arguments by which it may be proved, that the  
Scriptures are the word of God: & rules to be ob-  
served for the understanding thereof, p. 7. 8. 9. 10

Of the testimony of the Church, pa. 11. 12. 13.

Of the constancy of the Saints, page. 13. 14.

Of miracles wrought to confirme the truth,  
page. 14. 15.

Of the antiquity of Gods Word, page. 15.

Of the stile of Scripture, page. 15. 17. 18. 19.

Of the efficacie of the word of God, page. 19.  
20. 21.

Of the sweet harmony and consent of holy  
Scripture, page. 22. 23. 24.

Of the heavenly doctrine intreated of in  
Scripture, page. 25. 26.

The end of the Scripture, is divine, p. 27. 28.

The testimony of the Scripture it selfe is suf-  
ficient to prove that it is of God, p. 28.

The testimony of the Spirit is necessary & al-

## The Table.

Sufficient to assure and perswade the heart, that the Scriptures are of God, page 29.

Rules to be observed concerning the testimony of the Spirit, page 29, 30.

What is the divine authority of the Scripture, page 31, 32.

The Scripture is the rule of faith & manners, p. 32

How the Scripture is necessary, page 33.

The Scripture is pure, page 33, & perfect, 34 and plaine, 35.

Of the end why the Scriptures were written, p. 36.

All men ought to read the Scriptures, p. 37.

Of the Translation and interpretation of the holy Scriptures, and what rules are to be observed therein, page 38, 39, 40.

The knowledge of God in Christ is necessary to salvation, page 41.

This knowledge is easie, excellent, sound, sufficient, and comfortable, page, 42.

Arguments vwhereby it may be proved that there is a God, page, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47.

What God is, page 48.

God is one in essence, but in persons three, p. 49

What a person in Trinity is, and how the three persons are distinguished, ibid.

What a property in God is, page 51.

Of Gods vvisdome, power, goodnesse, graciouslynesse, justice, mercy, perfection, and blessednesse, page 51, 52, 53.

Of Gods glory, and how it is manifest, p. 54.

Of Gods decree & the parts thereof, p. 54 55, 56

Of Creation, page 57.

Of Providene, page, 58.

Of the Providence of God in evill, p. 59, 60.

Of Angels, page 60.

Man yvas good by creation, page 61.

The image of God in man what it is, and wherein

## The Table.

wherein it consists, page. 61. 62.

Of sundry priviledges which man enjoyed in the estate of innocencie, page. 63.

Of the covenant which God made with man in the estate of innocencie, page. 64.

Adam by transgression fell from God, pag. 65.

The sinne of Adam was wilfull and exceeding great, page 65. 66.

All men by nature are dead in sin. p. 67. 68. 69.

All the Actions of naturall men are odious unto God, page. 71.

What things are required in a good work. ib.

Why the least sinne doth deserve everlasting death, page, 71, 72.

Of blindnes of minde, hardnes of hearr, &c. p. 72.

Of mans recovery by Christ page. 74. 75.

Of Christs person, page. 75. 76. 77.

Christ is our Mediator both as God and man, p. 79. 80.

Christ suffered in soule as well as in body, 80. 81.

Of Christ his death; and the differences betwixt it, and the death of the Martyrs. page. 82.

Of Christs resurrection, ascention and sitting at the right hand of the Father, pag. 83. 84.

Christ is our Prophet, Priest, and King. p. 85.

Of his Propheticall office, & the manner how he hath & doth execute the same, p 84. 85. 86. 87.

Differences betwixt the Priesthood of Christ and the Priesthood of Aaron, page. 89. 90.

Of the functions of Christs priestly office, and the properties of his intercession, page 91

Of Christs Kingly office, and the functions thereof, page. 92. 93. 94.

Christ is the onely head of the Church, p. 92.

Of the benefits of Christs death, resurrection, ascention, and intercession, page. 95. 96. 97.

How the knowledge of mans misery by nature and

## The Table.

and recovery by Christ, will worke in the heart of him whom God will save, p. 97. 98.

The properties of true christ, p. 98.

Of the nature, object, author and instrument of justifying faith, p. 99. 100. 101. 102. 103.

Of catechising & the benefits thereof, p. 101. 102.

The benefits of hearing the word preached, p. 103. 104.

How we must heare if we look to profit, p. 105. 106

What it is to aply the word unto ourselves, p. 107

Of Prayer, the parts thereof, and encouragements thereunto, p. 108. 109. 110. 111.

Prayer must be made to God alone, in the name of Christ, p. 109.

Angels or Saints departed doe not present our Prayers before God, p. 110.

Libertie to pray is a speciall priviledge, p. 104

Of confession of sinnes, p. 111.

Of Petition, and things required therein, p. 111. 112. 113.

Of thanksgiving, and things required therein p. 114. 115.

An exposition of the Lords prayer, p. 116. 117. 118.

The benefits of observing how wee speed in Prayer, p. 131. 132.

Rules to be observed therein, p. 133.

Sometimes we aske and receive not, because we aske amiss, p. 133.

Why God for a time denies what we aske, p. 134

None can pray with hope to speed but they that depart from iniquitie, p. 135.

Prayer for the dead unlawfull and uncharitable, p. 136. 137.

Of publick Prayer, p. 137.

Of private Prayer in the family, or by a mans selfe alone, p. 138.

Of the signification of the word Sacramēt, p. 139

None

## The Table.

None may administer the Sacraments, but only the Ministers of the word, p. 140.

Of the Sacraments in general, p. 140. 141. 142.

There be onely two Sacraments in the new Testament, page. 143.

Of Baptisme, p. 144. to 147.

Of the Lords Supper, pag. 154. 155. 147. to 154.

The danger of unworthy receiving, p. 154.

What graces are required in them that come unto this holy Table, p. 156. 157.

The weake in faith should not absent themselves from this heavenly banquet, p. 158.

How we ought to be affected in receiving this Sacrament, p. 159. 160.

What we must doe after we have received, p. 160. 161.

Of admonition, p. 162.

Of excommunication, p. 163.

Of reading or hearing the Scriptures read, and the benefits thereof, p. 164. 165.

Of meditation, what it is, and the benefits thereof, p. 164. 165.

Of religious conference, and after what manner we must conferre, p. 168. and 166.

Of an holy fast, page. 167. 168.

Of an holy feast, p. 169. 170. 171.

Faith cannot be fruitlesse, p. 172.

The principall worke of faith is the purification of the heart, page. *ibid.*

Of the spirituall combat, page. 173.

Of sundry other fruits of faith, page. 174. 175.

Rules to be observed for the right understanding of the Decalogue, page. 176. 177. 178. 179.

Our obedience is to be performed unto God in and through Iesus Christ, page. 179.

An exposition of the ten Commandements page, 180. to 213.

No man in this life is able perfectly to keepe  
this

*The Table.*

this law, page. 214.

Wee must not omit the doing of good altogether though we cannot doe it in that measure that God requireth, page. 215.

What means a man should use to grow in grace, i. Of examination, and the benefit thereof, p. 216.

Of judging ourselves, page *ibid.*

Of watchfulness; what it is, and why it is necessary and profitable, page 217.

Of redeeming the time, page. *ibid.*

Why, and how, faith is to be preserved, p. 218.

Of the Christian armour, page. 219.

Of the many and great priviledges that God affords to his children in this life, p. 220. to 225.

All the godly doe not enjoy their priviledges and the hindrances thereof, page. 225 226.

How a man should bridle and reforme his unruly passions, *ibid.*

How a man should overcome his tentations to distrust, page 227 228.

A man may have faith that feels not comfort, page. 229 230, 231.

The fruits of the Spirit doe not alwayes appeare in the faithfull, page. 231. 232.

The danger of security, of leaving our first love, and of a relapse, page, 232, 233.

Such as have fallen into some grosse sin after repentance, should not utterly despaire, p. 234.

How a man should recover out of a relapse. *ib.*

Of the state of the godly as soone as this life is ended, page. 235.

Of the misery of the wicked after this life. p. 236.

Of the day of iudgement, and generall resurrection, pages. 237. 238 239. 240.

Of the eternall perdition of the wicked, & the everlasting blessedness of the Saints after the day of iudgement. page. 241. 242.



A

## Short Catechisme :

with an Exposition  
upon the same.

2 **W**hat ought to bee the chiefe,  
and continuall care of every  
man in this life?

An. To glorifie **G**od,  
and b saue his <sup>2</sup> seule. <sup>a</sup> 1 Cor. 10. 31.  
<sup>b</sup> Acts 16. 30, 31. Mat. 16. 26.

*Expos.* 1. Gods glory, that is, his sur-  
passing worthinesse, cannot be increased,  
nor fully manifested, Exod. 33, 20. because  
he is most perfect, psal. 16. 2, and infinite,  
Job. 22, 2. and 35. 7 God is said to glori-  
fic himselfe, when he makes his excellen-  
cie to appeare. Numb. 14. 21, psal. 72, 19,  
Ezek: 43, 2. Angels and men glorifie  
him, when they extoll his greatnesse, and  
testifie their acknowledgement of his  
glorie, Luk. 2. 14. Rev. 14. 7. Exod. 15. 2,  
Here then to glorifie God, is inwardly  
in heart, Rom. 4. 20. 1 Cor. 6, 20, and

outwardly in word and action. Matth. 5, 16, 1 Pet. 2, 12, to acknowledge God to bee such a one as hee hath revealed himselfe, Rev. 4, 9, 11, psalme 29, 1, 2, and 50, 23. Of glorifying God, man should bee most carefull: for God is the beginning from which, and the end unto which all things doe end. Rom. 11, 36, his glorie is in it selfe most excellent. Exod. 33. 18. 19, psal 148, 13, most deare to him. Exod. 7, 4, 5, Esa. 42. 8. & 48, 11. the supreame end of all divine revelation Ephes. 2, 7, of all his workes, Eph. 1, 5, 6, prov. 16. 4, Exod. 9, 16, psal. 50, 15, Iohn 11. 4, 40. of mans life. psal. 6, 4, 5, and service. Zac. 7. 5. 6. psal. 101. 1 Iohn 3 28, 29, and all meanes furthering the same, are availeable to mans salvation. Rom. 4, 20, 21, Ier. 13. 16. Mal. 2, 2, 1 Sam. 2, 30. psalme. 50. 23.

2. To take care for our salvation, is so to live here, that wee may live with the Lord hereafter. phil. 2, 12, 2, pet. 3, 11, 14. The salvation of the soule is most precious, psal. 49. 8. cannot be obtained without care. Act. 2, 37. 1 Cor. 9. 24. Matth. 7. 13. Luke 13. 24. and he is ever mindelesse of Gods glory, that is carelesse of his eternall

*With an exposition upon the same.* 3

eternall happinesse. Eph. 2. 12. Ioh. 5. 44. and 7. 18. Also eternall life is a durable treasure. Luk. 12, 33, and 16, 9, 10, 1 Tim. 6. 17. 18. all worldly things are vaine, uncertaine, and transitory. Match. 6. 19, Psal. 73. 18. 19. the soule came from God and is after a restlesse manner carried to seeke and desire communion with God; and a desire to bee happie is naturally planted in the heart of all men by God himselfe, therefore wee should earnestly set our affections vpon things that are above. Col. 3, 1, 2, Phil. 3, 12, 13, 14, and infinitely desire the enjoying of Gods presence in heaven: for hee is infinite in goodnes, the highest of all things that are to be desired.

*Q. Whence must we take direction to attaine hereunto?*

*A. Out of the c word 3 of God alone, c Iohn 20, 3, 1.*

*Expos. 3. God only can give the crowne of glory. 2 Tim. 4. 8. Iam. 1, 12, hee also is the author, obiect, and end of true religion. Gen. 18. 19. Act. 18. 25, 26, Iohn 6. 29, therefore none but he can reveale the way how wee should obtaine that everlasting inheritance. Psalme 16, 11. prov.*

2, 6, 9. For the nature of God is incomprehensible, his will and workes are unsearchable. Heb. 11, 6, Deut. 4, 4, 6, and 29, 29, Heb. 11, 3. No man hath knowne the Father but the Son, and hee to whom the Sonne hath revealed him John 1, 18, Matth. 11, 27, and the gospel is an hidden mysterie, 1 Cor. 2, 7, 10, Rom. 16, 25. 26, so that wee can know nothing of God, untill God himselfe manifesteth it unto us, psal. 103, 7, and 147, 19, 20. By the word of God, we understand the will of God revealed unto reasonable creatures teaching them what to doe, beleeve, and leave undone, Deut. 29, 29.

*What call you the word of God?*

An. The <sup>d</sup> holy Scripture & immediatly inspired, which is contained in the booke of the Old and New Testament, 2 Tim. 3, 16.

*Expos. 4.* This word of God hath heretofore beene diversly made knowne. Heb. 1. 1. as by inspiration, 2 Chron. 15. 1, Esa. 59, 21, 2 Pet. 1, 21. Ingraving in the heart, Rom 2, 14. visions, Num. 12. 6. 8, Act. 10. 10. 11. Apo. 1. 10. Dreames, Job. 33, 14. 15. Gen. 40. 8. Visions and Thummin, Numb. 27. 21. 1 Sam. 30. 7. 8.

Signes

Signes, Gen. 32. 24. Exod. 13. 21. Audible  
voyce, Exod. 20. 1. 2. Gen. 22. 15. and  
lastly by writing, Exod. 17. 14. This word  
so revealed, is by excellency called the  
Scripture, Gal. 3. 22. John 10. 35. and the  
holy Scripture, Ro. 1. 2. in respect of God  
the Author, Act. 1. 16. and 4. 25. the holy  
pen-men, Luke 13. 28. 2 Pet. 1. 21. the  
matter, 1 Tim. 6. 3. Tit. 1. 1. and end there-  
of, Rom. 15. 4. 2. Tim. 3. 17. The truth of  
God was delivered to the Church in writ-  
ing, Deut. 31. 9. Hos. 8. 12. Rev. 2. 1. that it  
might be preserved pure from corruption.  
2 Pet. 1. 12, 13. 15. be better conveyed to  
posterity. Ier. 36. 27, 28. Deut. 31. 9. be an  
infallible standard of true doctrine, & de-  
terminer of all controversies. Esa. 8. 20.  
Mal. 4. 4. Deut. 17. 11. that our faith might  
be confirmed beholding the accomplish-  
ment of things prophesied, 1. King. 13. 2.  
with 2. Kings 23. 16. Acts 17. 10. 11. and  
for the more full instruction of the Church,  
the time of the Messias either drawing on,  
Mal. 4. 4. or being come, Luke 1. 2, 3.

5. To be immediately inspired, is to be  
as it were breathed, and to come from  
the Father by the holy Ghost without all  
means: And thus the holy Scriptures were

inspired both for matter, and words. Luk. 1.70. 2 Pet. 1.21.

*Q. What are the bookes of the Old Testament?*

*A. 6. Moses and the Prophets. e Luk. 24.27.*

*Expo. 6.* All the books of holy Scripture, given by God to the Church of the Iewes, are called the Law. Luk. 16. 17. Iohn 12. 34 & the Prophets: Rom. 1. 2. & 16. 25, 26 because they were written by holy men, stirred up, sanctified, and inspired of God, for that purpose. 1 Pet. 1, 11. Heb. 1. 1. But ordinarily they are comprised under these two heads, the Law, and the Prophets. Math. 22.40. Act. 13.15. Math. 7.12. or the Law of Moses and the Prophets. Act. 28. 23. or Moses and the Prophets: Ioh. 1.45. Luk. 16.29. Moses being distinctly named frō the rest, because he was first & chiefe of the Prophets: as the Psalms are mentioned particularly, Luk. 24.44. because they are the choice & flower of all other Scripture.

*Q. Which are the bookes of the new Testament?*

*Ans.* Mathew, Mark, Luke, and the rest, as they follow in our Bibles.

*Q. How may it bee proved that those bookes*

with an Exposition upon the same. 7

bookes are the word of God immediatly inspired by the holy Ghost to the Prophets and Apostles?

A. 7. By the <sup>8</sup>testimony of the Church, <sup>9</sup>constancie of the Saints, <sup>10</sup>miracles wrought to confirme the truth, and the <sup>11</sup>Antiquity thereof. *f* 2 Pet. 1. 19. *g* Rev. 6. 9. *h* 1 King. 17. 24. Ioh. 3. 2. *i* Jer. 16. Heb. 13. 8.

*Expos.* 7 It is very expedient & necessary that all Christians of age & discretiō, should know that the Scriptures are the very Word of God, the immediate & infallible truth of God that is to be received, obeyed and beleaved. For thereby we are the better fitted to heare, reade, and receive the Word with attention, joy, reverence, submission. Act. 10. 33. and assurance of faith: which being a divine grace, must have a divine foundation. 2 Tim. 3. 15. 16. 1 Ioh. 5. and being certain, must have a sure ground even the word of God. Ioh. 5. 46. Eph. 2. 20. Rom. 4. 18. Also it ministers no smal comfort in affliction and temptation, that wee know whom we have trusted, 2 Tim. 1. 2. Act. 5. 29. This must be knowne not by opinion, or propable conjecture, which may deceive, but by certain and distinct know-  
B 2 ledge,

ledge, whereby we conceive of things certaine certainly as they are, and are assured that we conceive of them none otherwise than as they are, that wee may be able to stop the mouthes of Atheists and Papists, who carpe against the truth. 2 Cor. 13. 3. We come not to the understanding hereof by sense, or discourse of reason: this matter is to be discerned & beleevd by faith.

But for the fuller clearing of the point, sundry rules are to be observed, both concerning faith, & concerning the Scripture it selfe. 1. Distinction must be made betwene certainty of faith, and certainty of sense or sight. Things beleevd in themselves are more certain than things seene, but they are not alwaies so apprehended by us. Certainty of sight excludes doubting, so doth not certainty of faith, it is sufficient that it prevaile against them, Gen. 15. 6. 8. 1 Cor. 13. 9. 12. Iud. 6. 36, 37, 38. (2) Implicit faith, by which we confusedly beleve that such books are the Word of God, not understanding the sense of them, is to be distinguished from explicit faith, which is ever ioyned with a distinct and certain understanding of the thing beleevd. Ioh. 3. 2. 10. (3) Historicall faith, which stands  
in

in the certainty of the mind, and beleeves God speaking in his Word, must be distinguished from iustifying and saving faith, which contains the perswasion and confidence of the heart, whereby wee not onely beleeve the Word of God to be the chiefe truth, but also doe embrace it, as contayning the chiefe good of man. Iam. 2. 19. Ioh. 5. 35. Heb. 6. 11. and 10. 22. Eph. 3. 12. for all things in Scripture are not alike to be beleeved, neither doe the same Arguments serve to beget each faith. (4.) Concerning the Scripture, we must put difference betweene the doctrine therein contained, and the writing: for the signe is for the sense, and the knowledge and faith of both is not a like necessary. The doctrine was ever necessary to be beleeved, the manner of revealing was not alwayes, Ioh. 8. 24. (5) Of doctrines some are simply necessary to salvation containing the maine grounds and chiefe heads of Christian Religion; others are expositions, or amplifications of the same, very profitable, but not of such necessity. 1 Cor. 3. 12, 13. Col. 2. 18, 19. Phil. 3. 15. (6) A distinction is to be put betweene the Scripture generally

considered, in respect of the manner of revealing, and betweene the number and order of the Bookes: it being one thing to beleve that the will of God is now fully and wholly committed to writing; another that this is the distinct order, and precise number of Bookes. 7. Also it is one thing to beleve that God is the Authour of this or that Booke; another to beleve that it was written by this or that Scribe or Amanuensis; so that a difference is to bee made betweene the chiefe Authour of a Booke, and the Instrument thereof. 1 Cor. 12. 3. Mat. 10. 20. (8) The substance of doctrine necessarie to salvation contained in Scripture, is to bee beleved with an expresse, historicall, and saving faith: but the number and order of bookes is to bee beleved with faith historicall.

8. By the Church wee understand not the Pope, whom the Papists call the Church virtuell; not his Bishops & Cardinals met in generall Councell, whom they call the Church representative; but the whole company of beleevers, who have professed the true faith; whether  
those

those who received the bookes of holy Scripture from the Prophets and Apostles, or those who lived after. Under the name of the Church we comprehend not the Prophets and Apostles, as they were immediatly chosen and called to bee the penmen of holy Scripture; for they wrote not as men in the Church, but above the Church. The Church of the Jewes professed the doctrine, and received the Bookes of the old Testament, and testified of them that they were divine. To whose testimonie these things give force: 1. To them were committed the Oracles of God. Rom. 3. 2. (2) In great miserie they have constantly confessed the same, when as by the onely denying thereof, they might have bene partakers both of liberty and rule. 3. Notwithstanding the high Priests and others persecuted the Prophets while they lived, yet they received their writings as propheticall and divine. 4. Since obstinacie is come to Israel, notwithstanding their great hatred to the Christian religion, the holy Scripture of the Old Testament is kept pure and uncorrupt amongst them, even in those places which doe evidently con-

firme the truth of Christian religion, Esa:  
 53. 3. 4. 5, &c. The Christian Church  
 hath embraced the doctrine of God, and  
 received the bookes both of the Old and  
 New Testament. To whose testimonie  
 two things give weight. 1. their great  
 constancie. 2. their admirable and sweet  
 consent: for in other matters wee may  
 observe differences in opinions, in this a  
 singular and wonderfull agreement. This  
 testimonie of Christians is considered  
 three wayes; 1. Of the universall Church  
 which from the beginning thereof untill  
 these times, professing the Christian re-  
 ligion to be: divine, doth also professe  
 that these bookes are of God. 2. Of the  
 severall primitive Churches, which first  
 received the Bookes of the Old Testa-  
 ment, and the Epistles written from the  
 Apostles, to them, their Pastors, or  
 some they knew, and after delivered them  
 under the same title, to their successours  
 and other Churches. 3. Of the Pastors  
 and Doctors, who (being furnished with  
 skill, both in the tongues and matters  
 divine) upon due triall and examination  
 have pronounced their iudgement, and  
 approved them to the people commit-  
 ted

ted to their charge. This testimonie is of great weight and importance, profitable to prepare the heart, and to move it to beleeve: of all humane testimonies (wherby the Authour of any booke that hath, is, or shall be extant, can be proved) the greatest, both in respect of the multitude, wisdom, honestie, faithfulness of the witnesses, and the likeness, constancie, and continuance of the Testimony it selfe. But this testimonie is onely humane: not the onely, nor the chiefe, wherby the truth and divinity of the Scripture is confirmed, neither can it bee the ground of divine faith and assurance.

9 The Saints of God of all sorts and conditions, noble, base, rich, poore, learned, & unlearned, old, young, married, unmarried, &c. have suffered the most grievous torments, usuall, unusuall, speedie, slow, even what hell could invent, or mans malice finde out, for the defence of this truth. All these things a number numberlesse endured, and that with great constancie and ioy, even with a cheerefull heart and merrie countenance, so that none can thinke they suffered out of weakenesse, pride, vaine-glory, or discontent.

content : This patient suffering of the Martyrs is not testimony meereely humane but partly divine: for that courage, and cheerefulnesse which they shewed in the midst of all torments, was not from nature, but from above.

10. Many and great wonders, such as Sathan himselfe cannot imitate, such as exceed the power of any, yea of all the creatures in the world, such as the most malicious enemies of Gods truth, could not denie to be divine, hath the Lord openly wrought by the hands of Moses, the Prophets and Apostles, for the confirmation of this truth, Num. 11. 9. & 20. 10. Exod. 19. 16. 1 King. 17. 24. Mark. 16. 20. Heb. 2. 4. Ioh. 5. 36. and 9. 30. 33. Act. 5. 12. These miracles were sufficient to confirme the divinity of this truth, and writing, to them who were eye witnesses thereof. Heb. 2. 3. Ioh. 20. 20. Iudg. 2. 7. 10. The undoubted and cleare narration of them, is to us an invincible argument thereof.

11. That which is most ancient, is most true and divine; the purest Religion is before all others; there must needs be a Law before transgression; and a commandment

with an Exposition upon the same. 15

mandement given unto man before there could be place for the Devil to tempt him. But the Religion taught in Scripture is of greatest antiquity: the doctrine of the Creation and fall there handled, in all other Stories whatsoever is omitted.

*Q. How else?*

*A.* By *1 2* the *k* stile, *1 3* / efficacy, *swat*  
*m* *1 4* consent, admirable *n* *1 5* doctrine, excellent *o* *1 6* end, and the witness *p* *1 7* of the Scripture it selfe. *k* Gen. 17. 1 Psal. 50. 1. Esa. 44. 24. Exod. 20. 1, 2. 1 Cor. 11. 23. Ioh. 3. 36. 1 Cor. 1. 23. Iohel. 1. 1, 2. / Psal. 19. 8. Rom. 15. 4, 2. Rom. 7. 7. Zeph. 2. 11. Zech. 13. 2. Act. 5. 39. Act. 9. 5, 20, 24. Phil. 11. 12, 13. Rom. 15. 19. 2 Cor. 4. 8, 9, 10. *m* Gen. 3. 15. and 49. 10. Esa. 9. 6. Dan. 9. 24. Math. 1. 18. Act. 10. 43. *n* Psal. 119. 129. 138. 172. Deut. 4. 5, 6. *o* Ioh. 20. 31. *p* 2 Tim. 3. 16. 2 Pet. 1. 19.

*Expo. 12.* By the stile of the Scripture we understand not the externall superficies of words, but the whole order, character, frame, and comprehension, which fitly agreeth to the dignity of the speaker; and nature of the Argument, and is tempered according to the capacitie and condition of them for whose sake it was written:

Indeed

Indeed every Prophet and Apostle almost had a peculiar stile; *Esay* is eloquent, sweet, and more adorned; *Solomon* accurate; *Jeremie* vehement, and more rough, *Amos* simple: but all are divine. These things declare the maiestie of the stile. 1. The title, that the Author of the holy Scripture doth iustly challenge unto him, the which imports independence of nature, *Exod.* 3. 14. super-eminentie of power, and soveraignty, *Psal.* 50. 1. 2. excellencie both of properties and workes, *Gen.* 17. 1. *Esa.* 42. 5. and 40. 22. 26. (2) The maner used in teaching, commanding, promising, and threatning. Things above reason, hidden mysteries, such as exceed all humane capacity, are unfolded, without all argumentation or furniture of perswasion, *1. Cor.* 2. 7. and wee are required to understand and believe them, relying upon the truth and credit of the revealer. In giving the law, no proëme is used, but, Thus said the Lord; no conclusion, but the Lord hath spoken. *Exod.* 20. 1. 2. Commandements of which no reason can bee rendred, are enioyned, *Gen.* 2. 17. and that which a naturall man would account foolishnesse,

is peremptorily and with great severity required, Ioh. 3. 36. I Cor. 1. 23, 24. no argument being brought to perswade, or confirme the equitie of those commands; but onely the will of the Commander. Promises above likelihood are made; to assure of performance no reason is alleaged, but, I the Lord have spoken, Esa. 51. 22. and 52. 3. 4. and to encourage against difficulties and dangers present divine assistance is promised both as necessary and sufficient. Exo. 4. 12. Ios. 1. 9. Ier. 1. 8. Esa. 43. 5. In the manner of threatning also, the like notes of the Divinity of the style may be observed.

(3) That without respect of persons, hee doth prescribe Lawes to all men, private persons and publick Magistrates, whole Kingdomes, and severall estates, commanding what is distastfull to their nature, and forbidding what they approve, promising not terrene honour, but life everlasting if they be obedient: threatning not with rack or gybber, but eternal death, if they disobey, Ios. 1. 1. 2. Ioh. 3. 16. I Sam. 12. 25. (4) That the Ministers of the Lord of Hostes doe require attention, faith and obedience, to what-  
soever

soever they speake in the name of the Lord, whether it were prophesie, commandement, or rebuke; whether they called to repentance and reformation of things amisse, or exhorted to obedience, **1 Cor. 11. 23.** **Mich. 1. 1, 2.** The low and humble manner of speech, used in holy Scripture, cannot justly offend any man; for it was penned to the use and behoofe both of the learned and unlearned, **Rom. 11. 4.** though the phrase be plaine, the matter is high and excellent, profound and unutterable. **Hos. 8. 12.** **Act. 2. 11.** Easinesse and plainnesse doth best befeemeth truth: a Pearle needs not Painting, nor truth to be underpropped with forraine aydes, it is of it selfe sufficient to uphold and sustaine it selfe: it becomes not the Majestie of a Prince to play the Orator; and though the Scripture bee simple in word, it is great in power: no writings of Man, though never so well set forth, with wit, words, order, or depth of learning, can so enlighten the minde, move the will, pierce the heart, and stirre up the affections, as doth the word of God. Neither doe the Scriptures want eloquenco, if the matter bee

well

well weighed: no writing doth, or can equalize them in pithinesse of prophesying, or ferventnesse of praying. The song of *Moses*, and the beginning of *Esay*, in variety and force of eloquence, doe far exceed all authors, Greek & Latin; if comparison be made betwixt those places, and whatsoever is most excellently indited by man, either in Greeke or Latin, you may easily discern, the one was written by a Divine, the other by an humane spirit.

13. The efficacie of this doctrine doth powerfully demonstrate the Divinity thereof: for it converts the soule, inlightens the eyes, Psalm: 19. 7, 8. discovers sinne, Rom. 7. 7. convinces the gainsayer, 2. Tim. 3. 16. killeth and terrifieth, 2. Cor. 3. 6. rejoyceth the heart, Psal. 19. 8. Psal. 119. 103. quickneth, Psalm. 119. 50. 93. and comforteth, Rom. 15. 4. manifesteth the thoughts. 1 Corinth. 14. 25. overthrowes false Religion, casteth down strong holds, and the whole kingdome of Satan, stoppeth the mouth of Oracles, destroyes Idols 2 Cor. 10. 4. Zeph. 2. 11. Zach. 13. 2, & remains invincible notwithstanding all opposition. Act. 5. 38, 39. These things commend the efficacie of this word.

word. (1.) The nature thereof is opposite to the wisdom and will of a naturall man. 1 Cor. 1. 21. and 2. 14. Rom. 8. 6. and yet it hath prevailed. (2) It hath prevailed, not onely with the grosse and foolish Gentiles, who served other Gods; Gal. 4. 8. but even with the most fierce and bitter enemies thereof, Act. 9. 5, 6, 20. 21. (3) The enemies who did oppose this truth were many, mighty, and subtle; as principally the Devill, out of his hatred against Gods glory, and mans salvation, Ephes. 6. 12. Apo. 2. 10. and the Romane Emperours as his instruments, the rest of the world furthering, and the Jewes stirring them up; all which out of their love to falsehood and Idolatrie, and their malice against the Christian Religion, did with incredible furie, and vigilancie, labour the utter abolition of this truth. Act. 4. 27. and 9. 2. Math. 10. 18. 22. Ioh. 16. 2. Act. 13. 50. and 14. 2. 5. 19. 1 Thes. 2. 15, 16. (4) The persons whom the Lord did chuse to be publishers of this heavenly doctrine, were in number few, in outward appearance simple, rude, base, and weake, and sometimes also negligent. Math. 4. 18, 19, 20. Luke

6. 13. 2 Cor. 4. 7. 8. Math. 13. 25. 5. These simple and weake men, subdued the World by Preaching the Crosse of Christ, and prescribing long suffering and patience, 1 Cor. 2. 4. 1 Theff. 3. 4. Act. 9. 16. 2 Tim. 3. 2. 6. The number of all sorts, ages, conditions, sexes, and nations, who gave credit to this doctrine, & confirmed the same with the losse of their lives, was innumerable. Apoc. 6. 9. 10. 7. In short time a great part of the habitable world was converted, brought to the obedience of faith, so that *Paul* filled all places from *Ierusalem* to *Illyricum*, with the sound of the Gospell, Col. 1. 6. Rom. 15. 19. 8. The more the truth was persecuted, the more it did prevaile, Act. 8. 3. 4. Phil. 1. 14. 9. Though the Iewes were wasted with many & great slaughters, yet the Scriptures did still remaine safe, and intire in their custodie when the Hebrew Language did lie almost unknowne, and had perished altogether, had not the Lord provided for Religion; then by the Iewes, the deadly enemies of Christ, was the Doctrine of Christian faith preserved. 10. To these we may adde, the dreadfull judgements of God, which fell upon the persecutors.

of the Christian faith ; amongst whom some were forced, at their last gaspe, to acknowledge the Divinity of this word. All which things doe strongly confirme the propagation, defence, and conservation of this truth and Doctrine to be admirable, and of God.

14. The sweete and admirable consent which is found in all and every part of Scripture, cannot be ascribed to any but the Spirit of God ; each part so exactly agreeing with it selfe, and with the whole, Ioh. 5. 46. This may sufficiently appeare, by comparing the prophecies of the old Testament touching Christ, the calling of the Gentiles, and rejection of the Iewes, with the accomplishment of them, declared in the New, Gen. 3. 15. and 12. 2. and 49. 10. Numb. 14. 17. Dan. 9. 25. Mat. 1. 18. Luke 1. 55. and 24. 27. 44. Act. 26. 22. Deut. 32. 21. Mal. 1. 10, 11. Psal. 2. 8. and 110. 2. Act 11. 18. Psal. 118. 22. 23. Matth. 21. 42. Such exact consent as here is to be found, is impossible to be fained of men, or Angels, as the things fore-told were removed from their knowledge and finding out, untill they were revealed. These considerations give strength to this argument.

1. The length of time, in which this writing continued; *viz.* from *Moses* untill *Iohn*, which prevented all conceits of forgerie, since they were not written in one, nor yet in many ages. 2. The multitude of Bookes that were written, and of Writers who were employed in that service. 3. The distance of place, in which they were written; which did hinder that the Writers could not conferre together, *Ier.* 2. 1. 2. and 36. 5. *Ezek.* 1. 1. 4. The silence of the adversaries, who in all that long space mentioned, whiles the Scripture was in writing, could never detect any thing in those Bookes, as false, or erroneous; whose silence is of great weight in this case; because they were eye witnesses of those things which our Saviour taught; did, and suffered; according as it was prophesied of him: so that they knew the Prophecies, saw the accomplishment of them, and were acquainted with that which the Apostles had written. If the Prophets or Apostles who wrote the same Histories, doe seeme to dissent in any circumstances, this doth nothing derogate from their authority: for in themselves they

differ not, the fault is our ignorance, and apprehension: by a right and just interpretation, they may easily be reconciled; and the dissonancie which seemes to be amongst them in small things, doth free them from all suspicion of fraud; and their sweet consent in all matters of importance, doth convince that they wrote by the guidance of the same Spirit. If they had all written one thing, they might seeme superfluous; if each a new historie, there could appeare no steps of consent; when they relate the same story with the same circumstances, they have their use, one sometimes speaking more plainly than the other, and when they agree in matter, but seeme to dissent in circumstance, the truth is the more confirmed, an argument of fuller credit may be drawne out of that dissent: for as the Heathen man observeth, too exact diligence is neither approved of all, neither doth it want suspicion. To this sweet agreement of holy Scripture with it selfe, it might be further added, that it agreeth with all other truth whatsoever: there is nothing true in Divinitie, which is false in Philosophie, nothing in Philosophie is repugnant to the truth in Divi-

Divinity, but it may be overthrowne by the principles of right & true Philosophy:

15. The matter intreated of in holy Scripture is divine and wonderfull. It explicates unto us the nature, properties, and high acts of God, purely and holily. It describes the person of Christ, so fitly, excellently, and conveniently, that if the mind of man consider it attentively, of necessity it must acknowledge, it doth exceed the reach of a finite understanding. It discovers unto us the misery and corruption of man by nature, the incomprehensible love of God in Iesus Christ towards man, that happy reconciliation if (wee so speake) of his justice and mercie by his infinite wisdom, ordaining Iesus Christ to bee our Mediatour; and it unfolds the covenant of Grace, which God made with man after his fall; all which can be drawne from no fountaine, but divine revelation, 1 Cor. 2. 7. 1. Eph. 3. 4, 5. Col. 1. 26. The Scripture also contains the Law of God, which teacheth the duty of man, and that is wise and just, the Gentiles themselves being Iudges. Deut. 4. 5, 6, 7. In the precepts divers notes of Divinity may bee observed; as

1. The surpassing excellencie of the act,

C. 3                      requiring

requiring that we should denie our selves, and leade our lives according to the appointment of the Lord, Math. 16. 24, 25. Rom. 28. 12, 13. 2. The wonderfull equity that doth appeare in every commandement. 3. The admirable strangeness of some Acts, which a naturall man would count foolishness, yet prescribed as necessary, Ioh. 3. 36, and 8. 24. 4. The manner how obedience is required, *viz.* that it proceed from a pure heart, a good conscience, and faith unfained, Deut. 6. 5. 1 Cor. 13, 2. 1 Tim. 1. 5. 5. And the perfection of the law, commanding and allowing all good, but forbidding and condemning all sinne and wickednesse, of what kinde soever, Take a brieve view of the ten Commandements, are they not plaine, pure, brieve, perfect, just, extending to all, binding the conscience, and reaching to the very thoughts? And doe not all these things commend unto us the justice, wisdom, holiness, omnipotencie, omniscience, perfection, and absolute soveraigntie of the Law-giver? The promises and threatnings annexed to the Law, will suffer us to acknowledge none other author of them, but the Lord alone: for none can make them but hee,  
 hee

he onely can give eternall life, and inflict eternall condemnation. Moreover these are so set together with the commandements, as they can move none, but onely the conscience of him, who doth acknowledge the commandements to be divine.

16. The end of the Scripture is Divine, *viz.* the glory of God, and the salvation of man; not temporall, but eternall. The Doctrines, precepts, prohibitions, and narrations, are all referred to the setting forth of Gods praise, which shewes that they are from above, Ioh. 7. 18. and 5. 41. and 8. 50. 54. Gal. 1. 10. And to speake truth, what is more equall than that all things should returne thither, whence they had their beginning? This word also doth point out unto man what true blessednesse is, and how he may be reconciled unto God, being lost by sinne; which is a firme demonstration to prove unto us the Divinity thereof: for what is more agreeable to the wisdom, bounty, mercy, grace, and power of God; than to restore man fallen, and to make him partaker of eternall happinesse? and who can shew unto man, how he may be admitted unto Gods favour, having offended, or direct and lead him forward in

the path of life, but the Lord alone? These arguments are of great force, whether they bee severally or joyntly considered, and doe as strongly prove that the Christian Religion is onely true, as any other reason can, that there was, is, or ought to be any true Religion.

17. This testimonie of Scripture it selfe is most cleare, certaine, infallible, publick, and of it selfe worthy credit, it being the testimony of the Lord himselfe, who is in all things to be beleaved. But the externall light of arguments, and testimonies brought to confirme and demonstrate, must be distinguished from the inward operation of the holy Ghost, opening our eyes to see the light shining in the Scripture, and to discern the sense thereof, 2 Cor. 1. 22.

*Q. These reasons may convince any, be he never so obstinate, but are they sufficient to perswade the heart hereof?*

*A. No: the testimony of the <sup>18</sup> Spirit is necessary q, and onely r all sufficient for this purpose. q 1 Cor. 2. 14. r 1 Ioh. 2. 20. 27.*

*Expos. 13. By nature we are blinde in spirituall things. 1 Cor. 2. 14. Math. 15. 14. though therefore the Scripture bee a shining*

shining light, Psal. 119. 105. yet unlesse our eyes be opened, Psal. 119, 18. Act. 26. 18. wee cannot see it, no more than a blind man doth the Sunne, Ioh. 1. 5. The Spirit is the author of supernaturall light and faith, 1 Cor. 2. 8. 9. Eph. 1. 17. 1. Ioh. 5. 6, 10. by the inspiration thereof were the Scriptures written, 2 Pet. 1. 21. the secrets of God are fully knowne unto, and effectually revealed by the Spirit, 1 Cor. 2. 10. the same law which is written in the Scriptures, the Spirit doth write in the hearts of men that be indued therewith, Esai. 59. 21. Heb. 8. 10. For which reasons it must needs be, that the testimonie of the Spirit is all-sufficient to perswade, and assure the heart that the Scriptures are the word of God. To prevent mistaking therein, observe these rules. 1. The Spirit of God doth assuredly perswade our consciences that the Scriptures are of God, by enlightning our eyes to behold the light; writing the Law in our hearts, sealing up the promises to our consciences, and causing us sensibly to feele the effects thereof, 1. Cor. 2. 12. Luk. 24. 45. 1 Cor. 14. 37, Ierc. 31. 33. 2 Cor. 12. 2. 1 Thes. 1. 5. with 1. Thes. 2. 13. Act. 16. 14. 2. This perswasion  
of

of the Spirit is more certaine than can be proved with reason, or expressed in words: for things doubtfull may be proved, but things in themselves most cleare and certaine, be above all prooffe and reason; as the shining of the Sunne needs not to be confirmed by argument to him that hath his eyes open to see the light thereof.

3. This testimonie of the Holy Ghost is certaine and manifest to him that hath the Spirit, but private not publique, testifying onely to him who is endued therewith; but not convincing others, not confirming doctrines to others.

4. This testimony of the Spirit is not to be severed from the Word, which is the instrument of the holy Ghost, and his publick testimony. It is not therefore injurious to trie the Spirit, by the word of God. 1 Ioh. 4. 1. seeing there is a mutuall relation betweene the truth of the partie witnessing, and the truth of the thing witnessed and the holy Spirit, the Author of the Scripture, is every-where like unto, and doth every where agree with himselfe.

5. The testimonie of the Spirit doth not teach or assure us of the Letters, syllables, or severall words of holy Scripture, which are onely as a vessell, to carry  
and

and convey that heavenly light unto us, but it doth seale in our hearts the saving truth contained in those sacred writings into what language soever they be translated, Eph. 1. 13. 6. The Spirit doth not lead them in whom it dwelleth, absolutely and at once into all truth, but into all truth necessary to salvation, and by degrees. John 16. 13. with Act. 1. 6. and 11. 2. so that holy men partakers of the same Spirit, may erre in many things, and dissent one from another in matters not fundamentall.

*Q. What are the properties of the Scripture?*

*An.* It is of <sup>19</sup> Divine authority, the rule <sup>20</sup> of faith and manners, <sup>21</sup> necessary, <sup>22</sup> pure, <sup>23</sup> perfect, and <sup>24</sup> plain. *s* 2 Tim. 3. 16. *t* Eccle. 12. 10. Gal. 6. 16. *u* Rom. 10. 14. *w* Psal. 12. 6. *x* Psal. 19. 7. *y* Pro. 8. 9.

*Expos. 19.* Such is the excellencie of the holy Scripture, above all other writings whatsoever, 2 Tim. 3. 15. 2 Pet. 1. 19. that it ought to bee credited in all narrations, threatnings, promises, or prophecies. 1 Tim. 1. 15. Heb. 11. 11. 2 Pet. 1. 19. and obeyed in all commandments. Job 22. 22. Iere. 13. 15. Rom. 1. 5. God the Author thereof, being of in-

COR-

comprehensible wisdom, Psalm. 147. 5. great goodnesse, Exod. 18. 9. Psalm. 34. 8. Rom. 11. 22. absolute power and dominion, Gen. 17. 1. Psal. 50. 1. 2. and truth, that can neither deceive nor be deceived, Rom. 3. 4. Tit. 1. 2. Heb. 6. 18. The authority of the Scripture doth onely and wholly depend upon God the author of it, and therefore though one part may be preferred before another, in respect of excellencie of matter and use, Can. 1. 1. 1 Tim. 1. 15. in authority and certainty every part is equall, and onely Scripture is of divine authority, Gal. 1. 8. Mat. 17. 5. 1 Cor. 11. 23.

20. The Scriptures are the word of Christ, Col. 3. 16. whose word is upright, Eccles. 12. 10. Phil. 3. 16. the first truth, Heb. 13. 8. received by immediate, divine Revelation, 2 Pet. 1. 21. and delivered to the Church; sufficient to make the man of God perfect in all good works, 2 Tim. 3. 16, 17. the treasury whence all doctrines must be taken, 1 Pet. 4. 11. Act. 26. 22. Luk. 16. 29. the touchstone whereby they must be tryed, Act. 17. 11. Esa. 8. 20. without which error in doctrine and manners is unavoidable. Math. 22. 29.

21. In respect of substance the word of  
God

God was alwayes necessary, Eph. 2. 20. without which wee could neither know, nor worship God aright, Heb. 11. 3. 6. Matth. 22. 29. Ioh. 20. 31. 2 Tim. 3. 16. Rom. 15. 4. Luke 24. 26, 27. In respect of the manner of revealing in writing, the Scriptures were necessary, ever since it pleased God after that manner to make knowne his will, Deut. 17. 18. Iosh. 1. 8. Rom. 15. 4. Luk. 1. 3. Iude v. 3. and so shall be to the end of the world. 1 Cor. 10. 11. Rev. 22. 18.

22. This blessed word of God is free from all, even the least stain of folly, error, falshood, or injustice, Psal. 119. 138. 140. Prov. 30. 5. Ioh. 17. 17. all things being laid downe holily and truly, both for substance, circumstance, and maner of speaking, Psal. 51. 1. Math. 1. 25.

23. Whatsoever was, is, or shall be necessary, or profitable to be knowne, beleevd, practised, or hoped for, that is fully comprehended in the bookes of the Prophets and Apostles, Luke 16. 29. 31. Ioh. 5. 39. Rom. 15. 4. Galat. 1. 8, 9. 2 Tim. 3. 15, 16, 17. The perfection of the Scripture will more plainely appeare, if wee consider. 1. That religion for the substance thereof was ever one and unchangeable

changeable. Heb. 13. 8. Eph. 4. 5. Jude 3. Act. 26. 22. Tit. 1. 1. 2. 2. The law of God written by *Moses* and the Prophets, did deliver whatsoever was needfull for, and behoovefull to the salvation of the Israelite. Deut. 4. 2. and 12. 32. Psal. 1. 2. Mal. 4. 4. Hof. 8. 12. Luk. 10. 26. 3. Our Saviour made knowne unto his Disciples the last and full will of his heavenly Father, Ioh. 14. 26. and 15. 15. and 16. 13. 1. 18. and what they received of him, they faithfully preached unto the world, Act. 20. 27. 1 Cor. 15. 1, 2, 3. Gal. 1. 8. 1 Iohn 1. 3. and the summe of what they preached, is committed to writing. Acts 1. 1. 2 Iohn 20. 31. 1 Iohn 5. 13. with Acts 8. 5. 1. 1 Cor. 2. 2. Rom. 10. 8 9, 10. 4. There is nothing necessarie to be knowne of Christians, over and above that which is found in the old Testament, which is not plainely, clearely, and fully set downe, and to be gathered out of the writings of the Apostles and Evangelists. In the whole body of the Scripture, all doubts & controversies are perfectly decided, Esay 8. 20. Math. 22. 29 40. Deut. 17. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. 2 Tim. 3. 16 17. and every particular booke is sufficiently perfect for the proper end thereof. Unwritten traditions

ditions, 1 Cor. 4. 9. new articles of faith, Jer. 7. 31. & 19. 5. and new visions and revelations, are now to be rejected. Heb. 1. 1. Iohn 4. 25. Iohn 15. 15. and 16. 13. with. Math. 28. 19. 2 Cor. 3. 6. 8. 11. with Heb. 8. 13.

24. In themselves the whole Scripture is easie, Psalm. 119. 105. 2 Pet. 1. 19. Prov. 14. 6. such excellent matter could not be delivered in more significant, and fit words. Act. 1. 16. with Eph. 1. 17. But all things in Scripture are not alike manifest, 2 Pet. 3. 16. The Gentiles by nature have the Law written in their hearts, Rom. 2. 14. but to a naturall man the Gospell is obscure, accounted foolishnesse. 1 Cor. 1. 21. and 2. 14. Things necessary to salvation are so clearely laid downe, that the simplest indued with the Spirit, cannot be altogether ignorant of the same, Esa. 54. 13. Ioh. 6. 45. Deut. 30. 11. Matth. 11. 25. 2 Cor. 4. 3. But to them who are in part inlightened, 1 Cor. 13. 12. many things are obscure and darke, 1 Cor. 13. 9. to tame the pride of mans nature. 2 Cor. 12. 7. worke in us a reverence to the Scripture, 2 Pet. 3. 16. 17, 18. stirre us up with care and diligence to reade, pray, heare, &c. and use  
Gods

Gods meanes to grow in knowledge,  
 Pro. 2. 3, 4, 5. & acknowledge that all hea-  
 venly wisdom doth come from above,  
 Pro. 2. 6. Iam. 1. 5. 1 Kin. 3. 9. Iob. 28. 23.

*Q. For what end was the Scripture  
 written?*

*An. To*  $\approx$  teach, <sup>25</sup> instruct, convince,  
 correct, and comfort,  $\approx$  2 Tim. 3. 16, 17.  
 Rom. 15. 4.

*Expos. 25.* Faith and obedience is the  
 way to happinesse, and the whole duty of  
 man is faith, working by love. Rom. 1. 5.  
 Tit. 1. 1. 2. 2 Tim. 1. 13. Gal. 5. 6. & 6. 15.  
 which is assaulted with ignorance, error,  
 superstition and prophaneesse, 1 Tim. 1.  
 6. 19, 20. 2 Pet. 2. 1, 2, 3. and beset with  
 many afflictions. 2 Tim. 3. 12. Therefore  
 the Scripture, which was given to shew  
 unto man the way of life and salvation,  
 was also written to teach sound Doctrine,  
 improve error, correct iniquity, instruct  
 to righteousnesse, and comfort in the path  
 of holinesse, 1 Tim. 1. 10, 11. Tit. 2. 12.  
 1 Thes. 3. 3, 4. Heb. 12. 1. 2.

*Q. Doth the knowledge of the Scrip-  
 tures belong unto all men?*

*An. Yes:* <sup>26</sup> all men are not onely  
 allowed *a* but exhorted and *b* commanded  
 to read, heare, & *c* understand the Scrip-  
 ture

ture, *a* Ioh. 5. 39. *b* Deut. 17. 18, 19. Revel  
1. 3. *c* Act. 8. 30.

*Expos. 26.* The Scriptures teach the way of life, Prov. 2. 9. Luk 16. 29. Act. 24. 14. and 13. 46. Psal. 16. 11. Ioh. 6. 68. set forth the duties of every man in his place and estate of life, Deut. 17. 17, 18, 19, 20. Iosh. 1. 8. Psalm. 119. 24. 2 Chron. 23. 11. 1 Tim. 4. 14. and 5. 1, &c. 2 Tim. 3. 16. 17. are the ground of faith, Rom. 4. 20. 2 Chro. 20. 20. 1 Tim. 1. 15. the Epistle of God sent to his Church. Hos. 8. 12. Rev. 2. 1. 8. 12. his Testament wherein we may finde what legacies hee hath bequeathed unto us, 2 Cor. 3. 16. 4. Heb. 10. 16. Iohn 14. 17. the Sword of the Spirit. Eph. 6. 17. being knowne and embraced make a man happy. Psalm. 119. 97. 98. Luke 10. 42 and 16. 29. Psalm. 1. 2. Revel. 13. but neglected or contemned, plunge men into all miserie. Heb. 2. 3. Matth. 22. 29. Psalm. 50. 16. therefore all men of what age, estate, quality, or degree soever, ought to acquaint themselves with the word of God. 1 Iohn 2. 14. 15. Psal. 119. 9. Act. 17. 11. Deut. 6. 7. Act. 18. 25 28, for it was given of God, for the benefit and behoofe of all sorts, Rom. 1. 14. being milke for babes, and meat for strong

men. 1 Cor. 3. 1. 2. Heb. 5. 13. plaine and easie to instruct the simple. Prov. 1. 4. Psal. 19. 7. and full of hidden wisdom to exercise the strong, and satisfie the wise. Col. 2. 3. 1 Cor. 2. 7. Prov. 1. 5. that both sorts may be able to try the Spirits, 1 John 4. 1. be wise unto salvation, and grow rich in all spirituall knowledge and understanding, Col. 1. 10. and 2. 2. and 3. 16.

*Q. The Scriptures are written in Hebrew and Greeke, how then should all men read and understand them?*

*An. They ought to be translated<sup>27</sup> into knowne tongues and<sup>28</sup> interpreted. d 1 Cor. 14. 18. 19. e Neh. 8. 8. Act. 8. 35.*

*Expos. 27. The Prophets and Apostles preached their doctrines to the people and nations in their knowne languages. Jer. 36. 15. 16, Acts 2. 6. Immediately after the Apostles times, many translations were extant. All things must be done in the congregation unto edifying. 1 Cor. 14. 16. but an unknowne tongue doth not edifie, Gen. 11. 4. and all are commanded to try the Spirits, 1 Thes. 5. 21. 1 Cor. 10. 15.*

*28. The expounding of the Scriptures is commanded by God, 1 Cor. 14. 1, 3. 4, 5, 39. and practised by the godly, Luk.*

4. 16. and 24. 27. Matth. 1. 23. 1 Cor. 14. 19. profitable both for the unfolding of obscure places. Neh. 8. 8. and applying of plaine texts, 1 Cor. 11. 23. 24. 28, 29. It stands in two things : 1. In giving the right sense, Matth. 33. 38. Acts 2. 29. 30. Gal. 3. 16. 2. In a fit application of the same, Acts 2. 16. and 1:16. 1 Cor. 14. 24. 2 Pet. 1. 12. Of one place of Scripture, there is but one proper and naturall sense, though sometimes things are so expressed, as that the things themselves doe signifie other things, according to the Lords ordinance, Gal. 4. 22, 23, 24. Exod. 12. 46. with Iohn 19. 36. Psa. 2. 1. with Act. 4. 24, 25, 26. we are not tyed to the expositions of the Fathers or Councils, for the finding out of the sense of the Scripture, Rom. 3. 4. Matth. 5. 27. 28. 31, 32, 33, 34. 38, 39. 43, 44. the holy Ghost speaking in the Scripture, is the onely faithfull interpreter of the Scripture, Lu. 1. 70, 1 Cor. 2. 10. 11. Ioh. 14. 26. Esa. 55. 4. The meanes to find out the true meaning of the Scripture, are conference of one place of Scripture with another, 2 Sam. 24. 1. with 1 Chro. 21. 1. Esa. 28. 16. with Rom. 9. 33. Esa. 65. 1. 2. with Rom. 10. 20, 21. Mich. 5. 2. with Math. 2.

6. Math. 26. 34. with Mar. 14. 30. diligent consideration of the scope and circumstances of the place, Matth. 22. 31, 32. Acts 2. 29. as the occasions, and coherence of that which went before, with that which followeth after; the matter whereof it doth intreat, 1 Cor. 11. 24. 25, 26. and circumstances of persons, times and places, Act. 13. 36, 37, and consideration, whether the words be spoken figuratively or simply; for in figurative speeches, not the outward shew of words, but the sense is to be taken, John 15. 1. Math. 26. 26. John 14. 6. Exod. 12. 11. Joh. 6. 35. 1 Cor. 10. 16. and knowledge of the Arts and Tongues wherein the Scriptures were originally written, 1 Cor. 12. 10. Act. 2. 3, 4. But alwayes it is to be observed, that obscure places are not to be expounded contrary to the rule of faith set downe in plainer places of the Scripture, Rom. 2. 18. 20. and 12. 6. 2 Tim. 1. 13. Act. 13. 33, 36, 37. Rom. 9. 7.

*Q. What doth the Scripture especially teach us?*

*An. The saving knowledge of God, and Jesus Christ. Joh. 17. 3. Col. 2. 1. 2.*

*Expos. 1. Knowledge is the ground of obedience, 1 Chron. 28. 9. Acts 26. 18.*

a rich

a rich gift of grace. Mark. 4. 11. the first grace that God giveth unto his children. 1 Ioh. 2. 20. 27. and 5. 20. Iohn. 16. 4. and 6. 63. the foundation of all other graces. Pro. 19. 2. Psal. 9. 10. Hof. 4. 4. Esa. 11. 9. the guide of our affections, and director of our actions. Psalm. 119. 9. 100. 101. Prov. 2. 10, 11, 12. Esa. 30. 21. without which zeale is little worth, Rom. 10. 2. sacrifice was vaine, Hof. 6. 6. and devotion was but superstition, Act. 17. 22. 23. This, when it is made by the work of the holy Ghost, to be effectually to sincere faith, love, feare, and obedience, is saving, Iohn 17. 3. Esa. 53. 11.

2. Wee must know God, because otherwise wee cannot desire, Ioh. 4. 10. obey 1 Ioh. 2. 4. nor having communion or fellowship with him. 1 Ioh. 1. 5, 6, 7.

3. Wee must know Christ, because sin hath made a separation betweene God and us, Esa. 59. 2. so that wee cannot be received into Gods favour, or have communion with him, without a Mediator. Eph. 1. 3. 5. Rom. 3. 25. Eph. 2. 18. 1 Iohn 2. 1. 2 Heb. 10. 21, 22. Ioh. 14. 6. and God in Christ, or God and Christ, is the object of Christian religion. Coloss. 3. 17. 1 Pet. 1. 21. Iohn 14. 1 Heb. 1. 6. Christ is

the image of the invisible God, Col. 1. 15. the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, Heb. 1. 3. in whom, with open face we behold, as in a glasse, the glory of the Lord, 2 Cor. 3. 18. Iohn 14. 9. in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge, Col. 2. 3. The Apostles, who preached unto the world the whole counsell of God necessary to salvation, did preach nothing, Acts 8. 5. Rom. 10. 8. 9. Act. 28. 31. did desire to know nothing, but Iesus Christ and him crucified. 1 Cor. 2. 2. Phil. 3. 8. of him they wrote, that our joy might be full, 1 Ioh. 1. 4. and the Lord, who forbids us to glory in any thing beside, doth command us to glory in this, that we know him in Christ, Ier. 9. 23. 1 Cor. 1. 30, 31. So that this knowledge is necessary, easie, excellent, sufficient, sound, and comfortable, 2 Cor. 4. 3. 4. Act. 8. 8.

*Q. How may it be proved that there is a God?*

*An.* By the *g*<sup>1</sup> works and *h*<sup>2</sup> wonders which are seene, the testimony *i* of <sup>3</sup> conscience, the *k* powers of the soule, and the *l* practises of Satan. *g* Psal. 19. 1. 2. Esa. 41. 23. Rem. 1. 20. Acts 14. 17. Iob 12. 7. 8. 9. *h* Exod. 8. 19. and 9. 16. *i* Rom.

2. 15. Esa. 33. 14. Psa, 14. 5. & 53. 5. & Zach.  
12. 1. Psal. 94. 8, 9, 10. / Revel. 12. 7. 10.

*Expos.* 1. The first creature was made of nothing, otherwise it would not bee subject to change and alteration: and all creatures are finite, compound, imperfect, unable to make or sustaine themselves; therefore of necessity there must be a first cause, in power infinite, most perfect, and of it selfe, that gives being and continuance unto all things. 2. Nothing can be the cause of it selfe: therefore it should be both the cause and the effect, both before and after it selfe, therefore all things have their beginning from one first and supream cause, which is God. 3. Amongst things created wee may observe a series of causes, and an order in the things themselves; but order is from one first, and leads us unto one first. 4. All things, even things without life, sense, and reason, which cannot moove voluntarily, or intend an end, are directed orderly unto an end, therefore there is one wise, good, and chiefe director of all things, which is God. 5. The greatnesse, perfection, multitude, variety, and concord of things existing; the forme, and continuall sustentation of the world,

doeshew that all things doe depend upon someone, wise, and perfect good, from whom they have their being and preservation.

2. By wonders; wee understand visible and apparent works, extraordinarily wrought, not onely above the ordinary course of nature, but simply above the power of nature, either in respect of the worke it selfe, or the manner of doing; which effects doe convince, that there is an infinite power that is above, and doth over-rule all things: for every principall and primary cause is more excellent than the effects thereof.

3. The conscience doth register, bring to remembrance, and beare witness of the cogitations, words, and actions of all men: excuse and comfort in well-doing, against the disgraces, slanders, and persecutions of the world; accuse and terrifie for sinne secretly committed, which never did, nor shall come into the knowledge of men: incite to holinesse, and curbe and bridle from iniquity: which is a manifest token, and prooffe, that there is a supream Iudge, who hath given a Law binding the conscience, doth oblerve all our thoughts, devises, words,  
and

and works, and will call us to an account, and reckoning.

4. The soule is a spirituall, invisible, and immortall substance, endued with power to understand, and will; but the soule and the power thereof, is not of and from it selfe: therefore it must proceed from another cause, which is power, wisdom, and understanding it selfe, and that is God. 2. In the understanding there are certaine principles, whereby it discerneth truth and falshood, good and evill; this gift man hath not of himselfe, therefore it springs from a supream and most wise understanding, the principall cause being ever more excellent than the effect. 3. The mind is not satisfied with the knowledge, nor the will with the possession of all things in this world, but still they seeke, and earnestly thirst after some higher good: there is therefore a Sovereigne truth, and chiefe good, which being perfectly knowne and enjoyed will give contentment. 4. By the power and faculties of the Soule, man is capable of happinesse, or of the chiefe good: but in vaine should hee be made capable thereof, if there were not a chiefe good to be possessed and enjoyed.

5. By

5. By the assaults and suggestions of Sathan we seele there is a Devill, may we not then certainly conclude that there is a God? 2. Sathan labours by all means to extinguish the light of the Gospell, to leade men on in ignorance, error, and prophanenesse, and to turne them out of the path of holinesse: Now why should Satan warre thus against God, his word, and Saints, why should hee seeke Gods dishonour, and mans destruction, if there were not a God, a law, and an everlasting life?

*Q. How else?*

*An.* By the <sup>6</sup> consent of nations <sup>7</sup> defence *m* of the Church, <sup>8</sup> support and *n* comfort of the godly; but principally by the <sup>o</sup> Scripture. *m* Psal. 9. 16. and 58. 11. 11. *n* Jer. 33. 9. *o* Esa. 42. 8.

*Expos. 6.* All nations in every age, time, and place of the world, have acknowledged that there was a God. 2. The Gentiles could not endure him, who denied a divine power. 3. They adored stocks, stones, bruite beasts, and the basest creatures, rather than they would have no Deitie at all. 4. They were zealous and forward in the worship of their Idols, which shewes that though they  
acknow-

acknowledged not the true God, yet they know there is a God to whom divine worship is due. 5. Such as have studied to become Athiests, could never blot this truth out of their consciences, but the majestic of God hath affrighted, and his terrours madethem afraid.

7. The Devill with great malice and furie, and ungodly men with all their might, authoritie, malice, and policie, have laboured to finde out and extirpate all those that call upon the name of the Lord Iesus; but they have beene miraculously hid, preserved and defended by the Lord. 2. God hath wonderfully frustrated all the devices of the wicked enemies of his Church; by the meanes they practised to roote it out, it was increased. 3. God fought from heaven against the persecutors of his children, and executed upon them, the fierceness of his displeasure: dreadfull judgements did overtake many of them, and such horror fell upon some, that they were forced to leave their places of favour, and rule, and betake themselves to a solitarie and private life. 4. The Lord hath armed his children with invincible courage and fortitude, to endure disgrace, contempt, poverty,

poverty, death, and the most exquisite torments, that hell could invent; he hath supported them under the burthen of an accusing conscience, and inwardly refreshed them as it were suddenly with sweet peace and consolation; and by the power, strength and comfort of the holy Ghost, hath enabled them to sing Psalmes in prison, and in the midst of the fire: which courage, strength, and comfort of theirs, doth plainly demonstrate that there is a God; specially if you compare it with that feare, faintnesse, and unquietnesse, vexation, and deadnesse which is in other men, when they suffer any thing.

*Q. What is God?*

*An. Hee is p a Spirit, having q his being of <sup>10</sup> himselfe, p Ioh. 4. 24. q Exod. 3. 14.*

*Expos. 9. God is spirituall, invisible, and immateriall substance, p 1 Tim. 1. 17. Luk. 24. 39.*

*10. God is without beginning, Psalm. 90. 2. and 93. 2. Isa. 43. 12. & 44. 6. and without cause, Apoc. 1. 8. Esa. 41. 4. and 43. 10. and 48. 12. and so hee is without composition, infinite, Psa. 147. 5. & 145. 3. Exod. 3. 14. eternall. Prov. 8. 20. 22, 23. Rom. 16. 26. incomprehensible, Exod.*

33.22,23. 1 Tim.6.16. 1 King.8.27. Esa.  
66.1.& unchangeable, Ia.1.17.Mal.3.6.

*Q* How many Gods be there?

*AN.* Onely <sup>11</sup> one God and <sup>12</sup> three  
Persons, the Father, Sonne, and Holy  
Ghost, *r* Deut. 6. 4. 1 Cor.8.4.6. *s* Math.  
28.19. 1 Iohn 5.7.

*Expos.* 11. There can be but one Om-  
nipotent, Dan. 4. 35. infinite, eternall,  
most perfect, first cause, and director of  
all things: all things are referred to one  
first, Rom. 11.35. Apocal. 1.8. and 4.11.

12. A person generally taken, is one  
intire substance, not common to many,  
endued with life and understanding, will  
and power. A person in the Godhead, is  
the Godhead restrained, or distingui-  
shed by his personall property, Iohn 14.  
16. and 15. 1. The whole divine nature  
being indivisible, 1 Cor. 8. 6. is common  
to all three persons, Father, Sonne, and  
Holy Ghost, Act. 4. 24. 2 Cor. 1. 3. Iohn  
1. 1. Rom.9.5. Heb.1. 8. Num. 12. 6. 7.  
with Act.1.16. 1 Pet. 1. 11. Heb. 1. 1. Act.  
4. 25. with 2 Pet. 1. 21. & therefore what-  
soever doth absolutely agree to the di-  
vine nature, or is spoken of the divine  
nature by relation unto the Creatures,  
that doth agree likewise to every person

in Trinity, Iohn 1.1. Prov. 8. 22. Apoc. 1. 8. Matth. 18. 20. Iohn 3. 13. Iob 26. 13. and 33. 4. Iohn 14.26. Luke 1. 35. Every person in Trinity is equall in glory, and eternity, Iohn 10.30. Iohn 17.5. Phil. 2.6. Eph. 1. 17. with Iohn 1. 2. 41. and there is a most neere communion and union betweene them, by which each one is in the rest, and with the rest. Iohn 14. 10, 11. Ioh. 1. 1. and every one doth possesse, love, and glorifie each other, Prov. 8. 22. 30. Ioh. 17.5. working the same things, Iohn 5. 19. But the Godhead considered with the personall property of begetting, is the Father, &c.

*Q. What is the propertie of the Father?*

*An. To be of himselfe, and to beget his Sonne, & Ioh. 1. 18 and 3. 18.*

*Expos. 13.* The divine nature doth neither beget, nor is begotten: but the Father doth beget his Sonne by an eternall and necessary communication of his Essence, wholly and indivisibly to his Son, which yet hee wholly retaineth in himselfe. Iohn 1. 1. Pro. 8. 22. 23.

*Q. What is the property of the Sonne?*

*An. To be begotten of the Father; Iohn 3. 18.*

*Q. What*

with an Exposition upon the same. 51

*Q. What is the propertie of the Holy Ghost?*

*An.* To proceede from the  $\omega$  Father and  $\times$  the Sonne,  $\omega$  Ioh. 15. 26.  $\times$  Rom. 8. 9. Gal. 4. 6.

*Q. The nature of God is infinite and incomprehensible, how then may wee conceive of him?*

*An.* By his 7 properties, <sup>14</sup> and by his 2 works,  $\gamma$  Exod. 34. 67.  $\times$  Psal. 19. 1. and 8. 1. Iob 36. 24. &c; and 37. 1. 18.

*Expos. 14.* A property in God, is that whereby his divine nature is knowne in it selfe, and distinguished from all other. The properties of God doe not really differ from the Divine Essence, nor one of them from the other, but onely in our manner of conceiving; wherefore every property in God is inseparable and incommunicable.

*Q. What are his properties?*

*An.* He is <sup>15</sup> most *a* wise, <sup>16</sup> *b* strong, <sup>17</sup> *c* good, <sup>18</sup> *d* gracious, <sup>19</sup> *e* iust, <sup>20</sup> *f* mercifull, <sup>21</sup> *g* perfect, <sup>22</sup> *h* blessed, and <sup>23</sup> *i* glorious, *a* Rom. 16. 27. *b* Iob 12. 13. *c* Math. 19. 17. *d* Exod. 33. 19. Rom. 5. 8. *e* Psalm. 145. 17. *f* Psa. 103. 11. & 145. 8. 9. *g* Mat. 5. 48. Iob 35. 7, 8. *h* Mar. 14. 61. Ro. 9. 5. *i* 1 Cor. 2. 8.

*Expos. 15.* Wisdome is that, whereby  
God

God by one, Heb. 4. 13. infinite, Psal. 139. 6. and 147. 5. Esa. 40. 28. eternall, Eph. 1. 4. simple, Exod. 3. 14. and unchangeable act of his understanding, Esa. 46. 10. doth know himselfe, Math. 11. 27. Iohn 1. 18. and 7. 29. 1 Cor. 2. 10, 11. and all things, 1 Iohn 3. 20. Iohn 16. 20. and 21. 17. and actions clearely, infallibly, and distinctly. 1 Chron. 28. 9. 2 Tim. 2. 19. Psal. 56. 8. and 147. 4. Math. 10. 30. with all their circumstances; 1 Sam. 23. 11. 12. Math. 11. 21. Mat. 24. 22. Iohn 7. 30. discerning a most wise reason of them, Eph. 1. 11. Prov. 8. 14.

16. Strength is that, whereby God doth most freely, Psal. 115. 3. and 135. 6. without resistance or wearinesse, whatsoever he doth wil, Dan. 4. 35. Esa. 40. 28. and can doe whatsoever he can will, Math. 3. 9.

17. Goodnesse is that, whereby God being the chiefe good, Mark. 10. 18. sheweth himselfe very good and bountifull to all his creatures, Psal. 86. 5. Gen. 1. 31. Psal. 33. 5. and 36. 6. and 145. 9.

18. Graciousnesse is that, whereby God being truly amiable in himselfe, Psal. 86. 15, and 111. 5. is freely bountifull unto his Creatures, Rom. 3. 24. loving and cherishing them tenderly, without  
any

any desert of theirs, Psal. 145. 8, and 36, 5, 7, 9. Luk. 1. 30.

19. Justice is that, whereby God is true in all his sayings, Eccl. 12. 10. Rom. 3. 4. and righteous in all his doings, Gen. 18. 25. Deut. 32. 4. Job 8. 3. and 34, 10, and 36, 23. Psal. 92. 15. Rom. 9. 14. 2 Chron. 19. 7. Dan. 9. 14.

20. Mercy is that, whereby God of his free grace and love, is ready to succour such as are, Psalm. 57. 10. and 108. 4. Psal. 103. 4, and 145, 14. or might be in misery by the condition of their nature.

21. Perfectnesse is that, whereby God is necessarily all sufficient in and of himselfe, Gen. 17. 1. Job 22. 2, & 25. 5, 6, 7, Psal. 16, 2. and the cause of all perfection and goodnesse in every thing besides, Iam. 1. 17. 2 Cor. 3. 5. and 4. 7. 1 Cor. 8. 4, 6. Rom. 11. 36.

22. Blessednesse is that, whereby God fully and essentially knowing, and willing that perfection which is in himselfe, hath all fulnesse of delight and contentment, in and of himselfe, Gen. 17. 1. 1 Tim. 6. 15. and 1. 11. and is the cause and object of the blessednesse of his creatures, Psal. 16. 11, and 17, 15. Iohn 17. 3. 1 Ioh. 1. 3, 6.

23. Glory in God, is the admirable excellencie of his most holy and divine nature, whereby he infinitely excelleth all creatures, Exod. 33. 18. Psal. 8. 1. Ioh. 12. 41. Rom. 1. 23. Psal. 29. 9. This glory the Lord doth manifest more obscurely in this life. Num. 12. 8. Exod. 33. 20. 1 Cor. 13. 12. by his Gospell, 2 Cor. 4. 4. 46. and signes of his presence. Exod. 33. 22. Esa. 6. 1. viz. some shining brightnesse, Luke 2. 9. Matth. 17. 2. 5. or thick cloud and darknesse, Exod. 16. 10. and 24. 16. 1 King. 8. 11. and excellent acts beflowing his greatnesse, Psal. 19. 1. Psal. 29. 9. Exod. 9. 16. Iohn 2. 11. 2 Theff. 1. 10. But more clearly it is revealed in Heaven. Rev. 21. 23. Ioh. 17. 24.

*Q. What are his works?*

An. They are three, Decree, Creation, and Providence.

*Q. What is the Decree?*

An. That whereby God hath from eternitie set down & with himselfe what soever shall come to passe, & Eph. 1. 11.

*Expof.* 1. All things with their causes, effects, circumstances, and manner of being are decreed by God, Acts 2. 23. and 4. 27, 28. Eph. 1. 11. This decree is most wise, Rom. 11. 33. just, Rom. 9. 13.

14. eternall, Eph. 1. 4, 5. 2 Theff. 2. 13.  
Act. 15. 18. 1 Cor. 2. 7. necessarie, Psa. 33.  
11. Pro. 19. 21. unchangeable. Heb. 6. 17.  
most free, Rom. 9. 18. and cause of all  
good, Iam. 1. 17. but not of any sinne,  
1 Ioh. 1. 5. The speciall Decree of God  
concerning Angels and men is called Pre-  
destination. Rom. 8. 30. Of the former  
little is spoken in holy Scripture, of the  
later more is revealed, not unprofitable  
to be knowne. It may be defined, the  
wise, free, just, eternall, and unchange-  
able sentence, or decree of God, Eph. 1. 11.  
determining with himselfe to create and  
governe man for his speciall glory, viz.  
the praise of his glorious mercy, or great  
justice, Rom. 9. 17, 18. Rom. 11. 36. Of  
this decree there be two parts: Election  
and Reprobation, 1 Theff. 5. 9. Jude 4, 5.  
Election is the decree of God; of his free  
love, grace, and mercy, chusing some  
men to faith, holinesse, and eternall life,  
for the praise of his glorious mercie.  
1 Theff. 1. 4. 2 Theff. 2. 13. Eph. 1. 4, 5, 6.  
Rom. 8. 29, 30. The cause which moved  
the Lord to elect them who are chosen,  
was none other but his meere good-will  
and pleasure, Luke 12. 32. Rom. 11. 5. and  
9, 11, 16. Eph. 1. 5. 2 Tim. 1. 9. The end

is the manifestation of the riches of his grace and mercy, Rom. 9. 23. Eph. 1. 6. The sending of Christ, faith, holinesse, and eternall life, are the effects of Gods love, by which hee manifesteth the infinite riches of his grace, Ioh. 3. 16. 1 Iohn 4. 10. Act. 13. 48. Tit. 1. 1. Col. 1. 12. Rom. 6. 23. In the same order God doth execute this decree in time, in which hee did decree it in his eternall counsell, 1 Theff. 5. 9. 2 Theff. 2. 13. Reprobation is the wise, iust, and absolute decree of God, ordaining to leave some men unto themselves, to suffer them to fall, and to inflict upon them eternall punishment, deserved by their finnes, for the praise of his unspeakable and great iustice, Rom. 9. 11. 13. 22. Iude 4. Ier. 6. 30. The cause of this decree is the absolute will and good pleasure of God, Mat. 11. 26. Rom. 9. 13. mans sinne is the cause why God will punish, but no occasion why hee did ordaine to passe by; or to punish man, Rom. 9. 18. 20. This decree is iust, because God hath power over man, as the Potter hath over his Clay, to make one vessell to honour, and another to dishonour, Rom. 9. 21. Ier. 18. 6. Math. 20. 15. The end hereof is not the condemnation of the creature,

but

but the manifestation of Gods justice, Rom. 9. 22. Sinne is the effect of Mans free will, and condemnation is an effect of justice, inflicted upon man for sinne and disobedience, Ioh. 3. 18. & 12. 37, 38, 39, 40. 2 Theff. 2. 9. 10. but the decree of God, which is good, is the cause of neither, Psa. 5. 4. A man in this life may be assured of this election, 2 Per. 1. 10. 1 Theff. 1. 4, and eternall happinesse, Math. 24. 24. Ioh. 10. 28, 29. Rom. 8. 33, 34. 2 Tim. 2. 19. but not of his reprobation; for he that is now prophane, may be called hereafter, Math. 20. 5, 6.

*Q. What is creation?*

*An. That whereby God made all things of nothing, in sixe dayes.*  
*1 Heb. 11. 3. 2 Exod. 20. 11.*

*Expos. 2.* The first matter whereof all things were made was not eternall, Gen. 1. 1. Prov. 8. 22, 23. forthen it could not be subiect to alteration, Psalm. 102. 26, 27. neither should God be the fountaine of all goodnesse, if any thing had a being and not from him: then the word beginning could not be referred to all things. But it was made simply of nothing in time, Heb. 11. 3. and other corporall things were made of it, Gen. 1. 6, &c. by

no lesse power and wisdome, than the lumpit selfe, Ier. 10. 12. Rev. 4. 11. Iob 30. 4, 5, 6, 7, &c.

*Q. In what forme or manner were all things created?*

*An.* In an excellent order, and exceeding good, n Ier. 10. 12. Gen. 1. 1, &c. o Gen. 1. 31.

*Q. For what end did God make all things?*

*A.* For the praise of his great power, goodnesse, wisdome, perfection, and freedom, p Rev. 4. 11. Prov. 16. 4.

*Q. What is providence?*

*An.* That whereby God doth preserve, and governe all things with all their actions, q Psa. 3. 8. Psa. 36. 6. 1 Tim. 4. 10. r Pro. 15. 3. Matth. 10. 29, 30, 31.

*Expos.* 3. God doth conserve all creatures in their kind. Gen. 7. 1, 2, 3, and 9, 1, 2, 3. Act. 17. 25. 27. and in particular. Deut. 25. 4. 1 Cor. 9. 9. Iob 38, ult. or 39. 3. Psa. 147. 9. both in respect of their nature, and of their qualities, Psal. 19. 1, 2. Iob 39. 1, 2, &c. Exod. 23. 25. Deut. 28. 5.

4. God governeth all creatures according to their severall natures, Psalm. 33. 13, 14, 15. and 135. 6, 7. and 104. 14. and 145. 15. Iob 10. 8, 9, 10, 11. Prov. 20. 24.

Psal.

Pfal. 119. 91. with all their actions, Psal. 14. 2. and 33. 13, 14, 18. Eccl. 3. 1, 2, 3. &c. and 8. 6. Gen. 20. 6. and 50. 19, 20, even those things which are most casuall in respect of us, Exod. 21. 13. Deut. 19. 5. God in great wisdom and iustice doth suffer men to sinne, Psalm. 50. 21. Act. 14. 16. with-holding and with-drawing from them his grace, Psalm. 81. 11, 12. Matth. 11. 25. Luk. 10. 28. trying them by outward occasions, Gen. 3. 5, 6. 2 Sam. 11. 2. and 16. 20, 21, 22. Iudg. 2. 20. 21. giving Satan liberty to tempt them, 2 Sam. 24. 1. 2 Chro. 21. 1. Luk. 22. 31. and carrying them forward, when by their owne fault they are out of the way, Acts 17. 28. Psalm. 105. 25. Rom. 1. 24, 28. 2 Thess. 3. 9, 10, 11. Also hee doth limit sinne, and determine the sinfull actions of men, 2 King 19. 28. Gen. 37. 27, 28. Psal. 124. 1, 2. 2 Sam. 17. 24. 1 Sam. 24. 6, 7. and 29. 6, 7. Iob 1. 6. 12. Gen. 20. 6. both in respect of time, Iohn 7. 30. Luke 22. 53. Matth. 24. 22. continuance, Hof. 2. 6, 7. Act. 14. 16. and 17. 30. 2 Pet. 2. 9. Apoc. 2. 10. place, Matth. 16. 21, and 20. 18. Luke 13. 33. persons. Ezec. 21. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23. Iudg. 3. 13. and 9. 23. 2 Chro. 18. 31, 32. Act. 9. 25. and 23. 11. 21. 27. Ioh. 18.

8. inward purpose, Exod. 34. 24. manner of sinning, Prov. 16. 9. and 21. 1. and progresse, Gen. 37. 25, 26, 28. 1 Sam. 23. 26, 27, and 25, 22. Luk. 4. 24. 30. Act. 9. 1, 2. 1 Sam. 21. 13, 14. punish one sinne with another. 2 Chro. 25. 20. Rom. 1. 28. Exod. 7. 3. 2 Theff. 2. 9, 10. 11. and order them to an excellent end. Prov. 21. 1. Gen. 50. 20, 21. and 45. 7. Job 1. 11, 12, 22, and 2, 10. Esa. 10. 7.

*Q. What are the speciall creatures made, preserved, & governed by the Lord?*

*An. Angels and <sup>5</sup> Men. Hebr. 2. 7. Col. 1. 16.*

*Expos. 5. Angels are finite, Heb. 1. 13. 14. Col. 1. 16. Math. 4. 11. and 26. 53. Psal. 68. 17. compleat and immortall Spirits, Math. 22. 30. Luk. 20. 36. Heb. 1. 7. Psal. 104. 4. made after the image of God, Job 2. 1. Psal. 8. 5. Luke 9. 26. Math. 25. 31. Heb. 2. 7. that they might praise his name, and execute his commandement. Psalm. 103. 20. Esa. 6. 3. The Angels that abode in the truth are excellent, Ioh. 8. 44. Eph. 1. 20. and 3. 10. for their nature, Esa. 6. 2. Dan. 9. 21. 2 Theff. 1. 7. gifts, 2 Sam. 14. 17. Math. 6. 10. and 25. 31. Luk. 15. 10. 1 Pet. 1. 12. 2 King. 19. 35. Esa. 6. 2. Math. 24. 36. 1 Cor. 13. 1. offices, Dan. 7. 10.*

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 61

Rev. 5. 11. and estate, Math. 18. 10. Angels and men are speciall creatures in respect of their natures, gifts, Psal. 8. 5. and end why they were created, Psal. 103. 20. Psal. 95. 6.

*Q. What was the state of man by Creation?*

*An.* Marvellous & holy, and <sup>6</sup> happy, & Eccl. 7. 29. or 31.

*Expos. 6.* The whole man was made conformable to the will of God, free from all impurity and sinne, and endued with all perfect righteousnesse befitting such a creature.

*Q. Why say you that man was holy?*

*An.* Because he was created after the <sup>7</sup> Image of God, in <sup>8</sup> knowledge, righteousness, <sup>2</sup> and true holinesse, *Gen. 1. 26. Col. 3. 10. Eph. 4. 23, 24.*

*Expos. 7* The image or similitude of God, (for these two are one, *Gen. 1. 26.* with *Gen. 5. 3. Iam. 3. 9. 1 Cor. 15. 49. Col. 3. 10.*) is a lively resemblance of God, one in Essence, *Gen. 1. 27.* Man doth resemble God, not in respect of his bodie, nor chiefly in respect of the immortall and spirituall substance of the soule, endued with reason and will: but in respect of the graces which God bestowed  
upon

upon the soule, Eph. 4. 23, 24. Col. 3. 10. and yet by reason of the union of the soule and body, the whole man is said to be made in the image of God, Gen. 9. 6.

8. As God knowes himselfe, Iohn 8. 55. 1 Cor. 2. 10. and all things besides, Ioh. 16. 30. so man did truly, distinctly, perfectly, and effectually know God, Rom. 1. 19, 20. his will, Rom. 2. 15. and works, Gen. 2. 20, 23. and his owne happinesse in God, and his owne present estate, though hee was ignorant of the future.

9. As God willeth himselfe as the chiefe good. Esa. 42. 8. and can will nothing but what is good, so mans will was able to choose God, and all good freely, readily, and orderly, and to doe what was required, 1 Chron. 28. 6. and 29. 9. His affections also were subiect to the rule of perfect reason, duly and with a holy moderation caried unto that which is good, respecting God or man, Tit. 2. 5. 12. 1 Tim. 3. 2. Matth. 22. 27. 8. 39. Deut. 6. 5.

*Q* Wherein did mans happinesse consist?

*An.* In the enjoying w of <sup>20</sup> sweet peace

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 63

peace and communion with the Lord.  
Gen. 1. 29.

*Expos. 10.* God did love, favour, and accept of man; and man did behold, reioyce, and rest in the Lord with full delight.

*Q.* What further priviledges did man enjoy in his estate of innocencie?

*An.* He was placed in *x* Paradise, had liberty to eat of *y* every tree in the Garden, except the Tree of *z* knowledge of good and evill, and was *a* made ruler of all earthly creatures, *x* Gen. 2. 15. *y* Gen. 2. 16. Gen. 2. 17. *a* Gen. 2. 19. Psal. 8. 6.

*Expos. 11.* The event of mans eating, or forbearing that fruit, did give the name to that tree. If hee had obeyed, he should be happy, having experience of good: if hee did eat thereof, hee by experience should know what good hee lost thereby, and what misery hee brought on himselfe.

*Q.* Were these things bestowed upon man that he might live as he list?

*An.* No, but that he might *z* serve the Lord his Maker, who therefore gave man a law, binding *c* him allwaies to perfect obedience, and a speciall commandement to try him, *b* Rev. 4. 11.  
Psal.

Psalm. 95. 6. & Rom. 2. 14.

*Expos.* 12. God the Creator of man, Psalm. 100. 3. and in that respect his supreme and absolute Sovereigne, having bestowed so great gifts, and main liberties upon man freely, might upon his own will and pleasure require at the hands of man, what obedience soever hee had, or would inable him to performe. Deut. 11. 31, 32. Jer. 27. 5. and might also enioine him to manifest his loyalty and humility, by abstayning from some act in it selfe indifferent, for no other reason, but because he was so commanded, Dan. 4. 32. 35. Psal. 115. 3.

*Q.* What was that speciall commandement?

*An.* Of the tree of knowledge of good and evill thou shalt not eat, for in the day that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt die the death, & Gen. 2. 17.

*Q.* Death we heare was threatned if he did disobey; what promise was made to encourage him to this duty?

*An.* The continuance e both of <sup>13</sup> him selfe, and his <sup>14</sup> posterity in that good estate, e Gen. 2. 9.

*Expos.* 12. The tree of life seemes to be a signe and scale of the continuance of his happinesse, if hee had obeyed, Gen.

3.22, 23, 24. Prov. 3. 18. Apoc. 2. 7.

14. All mankind was created good in Adam, Eccl. 7. 31. Rom. 5. 12. 1 Cor. 15. 22. as other creatures were in their kind, Gen. 1. 31. and God did enter into covenant with our first parents, Gen. 2. 17. as they were the root of all their posterity: so that what they had actually promised to them, we had promised to us also in them.

*Q. Did man continue in that good estate?*

An. No, but<sup>15</sup> hee fell from God through the enticements of Satan, 1 Tim. 2. 14.

*Expos. 15.* Man was created good, but mutable, so that he might fall, Gen. 2. 17. Eccl. 7. 31. and God not being bound to uphold him, Rom. 11. 35. Gen. 17. 1. did suffer him to fall, knowing how to order the same for the setting forth of his glory, Prov. 16. 4. God knew before that man would transgresse, Act. 15. 18. Psalm. 149. 2. yet was hee not therefore to forbear to give man a most wise, iust, and easie precept, whereby hee would shew forth his Sovereignty over man, 1 Sam. 15. 3. 9.

*Q. How did he fall?*

An. By sinning & wilfully<sup>16</sup> against  
God

God, transgressing his law, *g* Ecc. 7. 29.  
or 31. Rom. 5. 12. 1 Ioh. 3. 4.

*Expos. 16.* Satan was the principall outward cause of the sinne of man, Gen. 3. 1. Ioh. 8. 44. Apoc. 12. 9. who envying the glory of God, and the salvation of man, did use the Serpent as his instrument to seduce the woman, Gen. 3. 1, 2 Cor. 11. 3. and the help of the woman to seduce the man, Gen. 3. 6. The quality of the fruit, by accident was a cause to move them to eat thereof, Gen. 3. 6. and the just and good law of God, forbidding that sinne, may be said to be an occasion of the sinne, as it did forbid an act in it selfe indifferent, that man could not commit it without sinne; but the principall inward cause of mans fall, was his owne free-will, freely and voluntarily transgressing Gods commandment, which he might, and ought to have obeyed, but would not, Gen. 2. 7. 17, and 3. 23, 24. Rom. 5. 19. Eccl. 7. 31.

*Q. What was the sinne he did commit?*

*An. The eating of <sup>17</sup> the forbidden fruit, <sup>b</sup> Gen. 3. 6.*

*Expos. 17.* The tree of knowledge in it selfe was good, Gen. 1. 11, 12. 1 Tim. 4. 4. Gen. 3. 6. but the fruit thereof unlawfull

to be eaten, because God had forbidden it to be eaten, 1 Ioh. 3. 4. Gen. 2. 17. And this finne of Adam was exceeding great, because it was the breach of so easie a commandement, Gen. 1. 29. with Gen. 2. 17. that God had given for the triall of his obedience, committed by him that had received great favours from God, Gen. 1. 26, 27, 28, &c. and that in Paradise, Gen. 3. 6. 23. Also it was accompanied with an heap of other finnes, infidelity, idolatry, unthankfulnesse to God, and contempt of him, blasphemy in subscribing to the devill, murder, &c.

*Q. Did all mankind finne in Adam?*

*An. Yes, i for<sup>18</sup> wee are all in his loynes, i Rom. 5. 12. 1 Cor. 15. 22. Heb. 7. 9, 10.*

*Expos. 18.* Adam was not a private person, but the common parent of us all; and as hee received integrity for himselfe and us, so he lost it for himselfe and us.

*Q. What is the state of all men by reason of Adams fall?*

*An. They are k dead in<sup>19</sup> sinne, and bondslaves<sup>20</sup> of Sathan, k Eph. 2. 1, 2.*

*Expos. 19.* To be dead in sinne, is to be utterly deprived of all life of grace, Eph. 5. 18, so that wee can move to nothing  
of

of our selves, that is truly acceptable in the sight of God.

20. To be bondslaves of Sathan, is to be under the power and dominion of the Devill, so that we doe, and cannot but doe his will and command. 1 Tim. 2. 25, 26. Act. 26. 18. 2 Cor. 4. 4.

*Q. How doth that appeare?*

*An. In that they are altogether / un-  
able to good: and <sup>21</sup> prone <sup>m</sup> to evill con-  
tinually. / 2 Cor. 3. 5. <sup>m</sup> Gen. 8. 21.*

*Expos. 21. Every faculty of Soule, and member of body, is defiled with sin, 1 Theff. 5. 23. Rom. 5. 6. The mind is blind, Ier. 10. 14. and 51. 17. Math. 15. 14. Eph. 5. 8. impotent, Luke 24. 25. Iohn 1. 5, and 3, 9, 10, and 8, 43. 1 Cor. 2. 14. Deut. 29. 4. vaine, Prov. 14. 12. Eph. 4. 17. 1 Cor. 1. 21, Es. 44. 20. foolish, Prov. 22. 15. Tit. 3. 3. Es. 29. 13. Iob 11. 12. apt to devise evill, Ier. 4. 22. The memory is feeble, apt to forget good, Luke 24. 6, 7, 8. to remember evill, but neither good, nor evill as it ought, Math. 27. 63. with Math. 26. 75. Deut. 8. 10, 11, 19. Heb. 13. 2. 2 Pet. 3. 5. The conscience is impure, Tit. 1. 15. Heb. 10. 22. benumbed, Gen. 42. 21, 22. Eph. 4. 19. Gen. 50. 15. Heb. 9. 14. or turmoyled, Iohn 8. 9. 1 Iohn 3. 20. Dan.*

Dan. 5. 6. 9. Gen. 4. 4. Act. 24. 26. and 2. 37.  
Prov. 28. 1. El. 57. 20, 21. Lev. 26. 36. erro-  
neous and superstitious, Mark. 10. 19, 20.  
Luke 18. 12. Matth. 15. 2, 3. John 16. 2. or  
doubting, Rom. 14. 23. The will unable  
to chuse good, 1 Cor. 2. 14. Phil. 2. 13.  
Matth. 6. 10. 2 Tim. 2. 26. Romans 8, 8.  
strong to evill, yea altogether averse and  
rebellious, Matth. 23. 27. Rom. 6. 19. Jer.  
18. 12. and 44, 16, 17. The affections un-  
ruly and disordered, Gal. 5. 24. Ro. 10. 2.  
1 King. 22. 8. and 21. 4. Iam. 4. 1, 2, 5.  
The members of the body are tooles to  
execute sinne conceived, Rom. 6. 13. 19.  
and 3, 13, Psal. 52. 4. 2 Pet. 2. 14, and in-  
struments to stirre up sinne in the soule,  
Gen. 3. 6. and 6. 2. 2 Sam. 11. 2. 1 King.  
21. 1. 2. Matth. 5. 28, 29. This pronesse to  
sinne is ever present, Jer: 7. 9. Gen. 6. 5.  
even then when the operations cease.  
And though a man finde himselfe lesse  
apt to one sinne than to another, being  
restrained, or renewed by the Spirit, Gen.  
20. 6. Jer. 32. 40, Eph. 3, 16, or by reason  
of some other defects, or lets, 2 Kings 1,  
12, & 19, 35, 1 Kings 13, 4, Hos. 2, 7, John  
12, 19, Mar. 11. 32, Acts 5, 26, Matth. 21,  
46, Gen. 37. 25, 26, 27, and 39, 8, 9, Luke  
4, 30, Ioh. 8, 59, yet corruption causeth an

aptitude to every sinne, if it be not hindered.

*Q. What fruits doe proceed from this Originall corruption?*

*An. Evil<sup>22</sup> thoughts, & words, & and works, n Gen. 6, 5, Col. 1, 21, & Gal. 5. 19.*

*Expos. 22.* The thoughts and desires naturally are ignorant, erroneous, unbelieving, deceitfull, unruly, loose, wilfull, vaine, idle, blockish, not favouring good, proud, disdainfull, uncharitable, filthy, &c. and in a word, abominable, odious. The words and works, answerable to these, Psal. 94, 7, Esa. 29, 15, Psal. 10, 4, and 14, 1, Deut. 29. 19, 20, Amos 6, 3, and 9, 10, 1 Cor. 1, 23, Esa. 5, 19, Psal. 136, 1, Iob 21, 14, 15, Ier. 6, 16, Luke 19, 14, Mal. 3, 14, Psal. 73, 13, Numb. 20, 10, 12, Psal. 31, 22, and 116, 11, Matth. 14, 30, Luke 18, 11, Deut. 15, 9, Psal. 83, 4, 1 Pet. 4, 3, 4, Gen. 28, 15, 16, 2 Sam. 13, 2, Mich. 2, 1, Amos 8, 5, 1 Sam. 1, 13, 14, and 17, 28, Matth. 9, 4, Es. 14, 14, Zeph. 1, 12, Obad. 3, v. Rev. 18, 7, Es. 65, 5, Ier. 2, 25, Rev. 3, 17, Matth. 9, 18, Psalme 30, 6, Luke 12, 19, Iob. 4, 8, 9, Hof. 7, 12, Matth. 24, 37, 38, 39, Ier. 8, 6, 2 Pet. 3, 3, 4, Psal. 10, 7, Pro. 1, 11.

*Q. Arc*

with an Exposition upon the same. 71

Q. Are all the actions of naturall men evill continually?

An. Yea; <sup>23</sup> for they p faile in many things, and as they come from them they are  $\rho$  odious unto God, p Matth. 12. 35.  $\rho$  Prov. 28. 9.

Expos. 23. A man by nature may doe an act that is good for the substance thereof, Dan. 4. 27. or 24 Rom. 2. 15. but never that which is truly and spiritually good, Matth. 7. 18. Ier. 13. 23. Rom. 3. 10. Prov. 15. 8. and 21. 27. for his person is not accepted, Gen. 4. 4. 1 Per. 2. 5. not sanctified, and so the good acts hee doth, proceed not from a good root, *viz.* faith, and the spirit of sanctification, 2 Tim. 1. 5. neither is it done in a right manner, Iam. 4. 3 nor to a lawfull end, *viz.* the glory of God, 1 Cor. 10. 31. Col. 3. 17. all which are required to the being of a good act.

Q. What punishments are due unto man by reason of these sinnes?

An. All woer and <sup>24</sup> misery, temporal, spirituall, and eternall; Lam. 3. 39. Rom. 6. 23. Gal. 3. 10.

Expos. 24. The least sinne, is a very vile breach of Gods most holy Law, 1 Ioh. 3. 4. Deut. 27. 26. and so an hainous

offence against his infinite Majestic, Psal. 51. 4. also of its own nature it is alwayes joyned with impenitencie, Acts 5. 31. and 17. 30. and therefore doth deserve death with all miseries accompanying the same.

*Q. Which are the temporall miseries?*

*An.* Gods curse upon the creatures, & on mans body, senses, name, friends, whatsoever he takes in hand, and death it selfe, *s* Rom. 8. 20. *t* Deut. 28. 25, 26, &c. *u* Rom. 6. 21.

*Q. What are the spirituall miseries?*

*An.* <sup>25</sup> Blindnes *w* of minde, the *x* spirit of slumber and giddines, *y* horzour of conscience, *z* hardnesse of heart, a reprobate *a* sense, and strong delusions, *w* Esa. 6. 9. *x* Rom. 11. 8. *y* Matth. 27. 3, 6, 5. *z* Ex. 7. 3. *a* Rom. 1. 28. *b* 2 Thess. 2. 11.

*Expos.* 25. To be blinde in minde, is to be utterly destitute of the true knowledge of God, and of the life to come, and to be hastning to endlesse woes, and yet not understand it.

26. The Spirit of slumber, is that which through a vaine perswasion of a mans good and safe estate, lulleth him a sleepe in security Deut. 29. 19.

27. Horzour of conscience, is when the  
consci-

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 73

conscience awakened, filleth the soule with deepe doubts, hellish, and unrecoverable desperation, and remediless feares of everlasting damnation, Revel. 6. 16, 17.

28. Hardnesse of heart, is a fearefull judgement of God, whereby the heart is past all feeling, and remorse, shut fast up that neither the Word, nor works of God can kindly work upon it, Esa. 48. 4. Zach. 7. 11, 12.

29. A reprobate sense or minde, is a minde destitute of judgement, and voyd of common reason, taking evill for good, and good for evill; neither fearing God, nor reverencing Man, regarding neither right nor wrong, Luke 18. 4.

30. Strong delusions are, when men are given over to take pleasure in beleeving lies, and idle fancies of vaine heads. To these wee may adde phrensie, madnes, Deut. 28. 28. to be given over to vile affections, God with-drawing from men, his grace, and in his secret, but just and dreadfull judgement; giving them over to most sordid, and loathsome, unnaturall, and inordinate lusts, Psalme 81. 12 Gen. 19. 5.

*Q. Which is the eternall misery?*

An. <sup>31</sup> Everlasting & damnation;  
cRom. 6. 23.

*Expos.* 31. Damnation, which is an everlasting separation of soule and body, from the comfortable presence of God, Matth. 7. 23. Rev. 22. 15. and an enduring of easelesse, endlesse, remediless tortures with the devill and his Angels, Matth. 25. 41. Rev. 20. 15. Luke 16. 24, 25. in the due desert of sinne.

Q After a man doth know his miserie, what must he learne in the next place?

An. The true means <sup>1</sup> how he d may escape the fore said misery, and be e restored to happinesse, d Acts 2. 37. e Acts 16. 30.

*Expos.* 1. God in justice passed by the Angels, who fell without the enticement of any other. 2 Pet. 2. 4. Iude 6, Matth. 25. 41. but of his infinite love, free grace and mercy, Esa. 43. 25. Ier. 31. 1. Hos. 14. 4. Iohn 3. 16. Rom. 5. 8, 9. Ephes. 1. 5. 6. 1 Iohn 5. 19. hee hath prescribed meanes, whereby man might escape misery, and be restored to happinesse, Acts 2. 37, 38, 39, 40.

Q. By what meanes may we escape this misery and recover happinesse?

An. Only = be f Jesus Christ, f Act. 4. 12.

*Expos.*

with an Exposition upon the same. 75

*Expos.* 2. God in justice doth hate sinne, Esai. 1. 2. Psal. 45 7. and hath denounced death against the transgressours of his Law, Gen. 2. 17. Deut. 27. 26. Es. 30. 33. Ier. 4. 4. therefore to satisfie his justice, Col. 1. 20. and make way for mercy. Psalm. 145. 9. his infinite wisdomme found out a meanes, Gen. 3. 15. even by Iesus Christ, upon whom the Father laid this office of Reconciliation, Psalm. 40. 6. 7. Heb. 5. 5. Ioh. 3. 17. and 5. 36, 37. which he willingly undertooke, Hebr. 10. 7. 9. and did faithfully discharge, Heb. 10. 5, 6 7.

*Q* What is Iesus Christ?

*An.* The eternall Sonne of God, who in time became man, for his Elect, Gal. 4. 4, 5.

*Expos.* 3. The Sonne of God by nature became the Sonne of Man, that hee might make us the Sonnes of God by adoption, who were by nature the Children of wrath: Eph. 2. 3. it being fit that our Reconciliation should be wrought by the Sonne. Es. 61. 1. Iohn 14. Iohn 5. 36, 37. Col. 1. 16, 17. Heb. 1. 3. Ioh. 5. 17. and 3. 17. and sealed by the holy Ghost, Eph. 1. 13, and 4. 30.

*Q. How many things are we to consider in Christ?*

*A. His i person and his koffice, i Col. 2.9. k Heb. 2.16, 17.*

*Q. What is his person?*

*A. It is / God and man + united together into *m* one person, / Ioh. 1.14. Esa. 7.14. Rom. 9.5. *m* i Cor. 8.6.*

*Expos. 4. In Christ there are two distinct natures, Heb. 1.4, 5. Matth. 18.20. with i Tim. 2.5; Luk. 1.35. Matth. 18.20. Rev. 1.8. Heb. 1.11, 12. Iohn 16.30. Phil. 2.6. Ioh. 1.3, and 5, 17. Math. 8.13. with Luke 22.43. Matth. 24.36, and 27, 4, 6. Ioh. 4.6, and 11, 35, and 14, 28. Eph. 4.10. inseparably united. i Pet. 3.18. Ioh. 10.18. Heb. 9.14. not confounded, Rom. 1.3, 4, & 9, 5. i Ioh. 16.30. with Luke 2.52. Mar. 13.32. and yet there is but one Christ, not many Christs; i Cor. 8.6. i Tim. 2.5. for the God did assume the humane nature to it selfe, Phil. 2.7. Heb. 2.16. so that the manhood subsisteth in the Godhead; Matth. 3.17. and 17.5. and they are so inseparably united, that the selfe-same person which is God, is also man, Ioh. 3.13. Eph. 4.10.*

*Q. Being God before all time; how could he be made man?*

*An.*

An. He was *n*<sup>s</sup> conceived by the holy Ghost, borne of the virgin Marie, according to the Prophets, *n* Luke 1. 35. *o* Gen. 3. 15. Esa. 7. 14, and 11, 1.

*Expos. 5.* Christs conception is the miraculous and supernaturall forming of his humane nature in the wombe of the Virgin Marie, Esa. 7. 14. Gen. 49. 10. Luke 1. 35. by the power of the holy Ghost. Matth. 1. 18, 20. who did perfectly sanctifie it in the very first moment of conception. Luke 1. 35.

*Q. Why was Christ conceived by the holy Ghost?*

An. That he might be *p* pure, without sinne, wherewith all are *q* stained, who are conceived after the ordinary manner. *p* Luke 1. 35. *q* Iohn 3. 6.

*Q. Why was he God?*

An. That he might beare the weight of Gods wrath without sinking under it, overcome death, be the Head <sup>o</sup> of the Church, repaire his Image in us, conquer the enemies of our salvation, and defend us against them.

*Expos. 6.* The dignity of being Head of the Church is so great, that it cannot agree to any meere man, Eph. 1. 21. Phil. 2. 9, 10, 11. Heb. 1. 6. also the offices of  
the

the head, are to give the power of life, feeling, and moving, to the body, Ioh. 1. 4. Rom. 8. 2. and to direct by his power, the inward and outward functions of the bodie; Eph. 5. 23, 24. which benefits hee that is man onely cannot bestow upon the Church.

*Q. Why was he man?*

*An.* That he might suffer death for us, sanctifie our nature, and we might have access with boldnes to the throne of grace, r Heb. 2. 14. s Heb. 2. 11. t Heb. 4. 15, 16.

*Expos.* 7. The divine nature could not suffer, Iam. 1. 17. Mal. 3. 6. Rom. 9. 5. and without shedding of blood there could be no remission of sins; Heb 9. 22. Christ therefore tooke our nature, that he might suffer death, Phil. 2. 7. specially it being no wayes meet, that one having no speciall communion with another, should endure punishment for anothers fault, Heb. 2. 16, 17.

8. Fulnesse of all graces above measure, were poured into the humane nature of Christ our Saviour, Matth. 3. 16. Ioh. 1. 16. and 3. 34. Col. 2. 9. and 1. 19. and wee being united to him, and having communion with him, doe receive in measure

sure of his fulnesse, Eph. 4. 7. 17.

Q. What is his office ?

An. To be *Mediatour* to reconcile God and man. *1 Tim. 2. 5.*

*Expos. 9.* A Mediatour, or an Advocate, is a third person that takes upon him to agree and reconcile two that be at variance; as Christ being both God and man, did set at one, God and man; Eph. 1. 10. Col. 1. 20. 1 John 2. 1. who before were separated by sinne, Esa. 59. 2. Jer. 5. 25. Christ is our Mediatour both as God and man, John 1. 29. 34. & 3. 14. 16. Rom. 5. 8. 1 John 1. 7. Phil. 2. 6. for in the work of our redemption hee performed many divine works, Heb. 2. 14. John 10. 18. as Mediatour, hee is the King and Head of his Church, Luke 1. 33. Job. 3. 38. Act. 2. 36. Phil. 2. 10, 11. Matth. 28. 18. Heb. 1. 6. and 2. 7. and the speciall offices of Christ our Mediatour, doe necessarily require, that the divine and humane nature joyntly doe concurre in the execution of them, John 1. 18. Matth. 11. 27. John 3. 12, 13. 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19, 20. Rom. 5. 10, 11. Heb. 9. 14. and 7. 25. This office is peculiar to Christ, John 14. 6. 1 Tim. 2. 5, 6. Heb. 7. 24. and neither in whole, nor part can be transferred to any other, Acts

4. 10, 11, 12. Heb. 4. 14. Ioh. 11. 42. 1 Iohn 2. 1. Heb. 7. 25. Eph. 3. 12. Heb. 2. 14, 15. Act. 10. 42, 43. and 17. 31. In the decree of God, Christ was a Mediatour from eternity, Eph. 1. 5, 6. In the vertue and efficacy of his mediation, hee was given to be Mediatour as soone as necessity required, Rev. 13. 8. Gen. 3. 15. In the fulnesse of time, hee was manifested in the flesh, Gal. 4. 4, 5.

*Q* How did he that?

*A.* *w* By his fulfilling <sup>10</sup> the law, and by his <sup>11</sup> *x* sufferings, *w* Maith. 3. 15. *x* Heb. 9. 15. Rom. 5. 10. 11.

*Expos.* 10. It became him who was our faithfull high Priest to fulfill all righteousness.

• 11 The justice of God must be satisfied, and the debt of sinne must be payed, before God, who is true, just, and unchangeable, could be pleased with us, 1 Iohn 2, 2, Heb. 9. 14, 15. 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19. Rev. 1. 5.

*Q.* What understand you by his sufferings?

*A.* His voluntary *y* humiliation both in *z* <sup>12</sup> soule and body, his *a* crucifying *b* <sup>13</sup> death, buriall, and *c* abiding <sup>14</sup> under the dominion of death for a time. *y* Phil.

with an Exposition upon the same. 81

2. 5, 6, 7, 8. & Esa. 53. 10. Matth. 26. 58.  
Heb. 9. 14. & Luk. 23. 33. b 1 Cor. 15. 3, 4.  
c Act. 2. 27.

Expos. 12. Christ in his incarnation did assume our whole nature, Luke 2. 40. 52. Heb. 2. 6. Luk. 23. 46. 1 Tim. 2. 5. Luke 19. 10. Matth. 26. 38. Mark. 14. 34. Matth. 27. 16. Iohn 19. 30. Heb. 10. 5. Matth. 26. 12. Heb. 2. 17. that by offering it up a sacrifice for sinne, hee might redeeme us, Heb. 8. 1. 2, 3. Heb. 9. 14. and 13. 10, 11, 12. In our nature hee became our surety, Iob 19. 25. Heb. 7. 22. therefore hee suffered properly in soule as well as in body, Matth. 27. 46. Gal. 3. 13. Heb. 2. 9, 10, 14. which is set forth in the Lords Supper, 1 Cor. 11. 25. and was signified by the sacrifices in the Law, Hebr. 9. 19, 20, 21, 22.

13. The death of Christ was the separation of the soule and body, Matth. 27. 50. Luke 23. 46. though they both continued still united to the Godhead, Matth. 1. 23. Iohn 1. 14. 1 Pet. 3. 18 1 Cor. 2. 8. It was necessary that Christ should die, that he might satisfie Gods iustice, Heb. 9. 22. abolish and kill sinne, Matth. 26. 28. Rom. 5. 10. Rom. 8. 3. Rom. 6. 10, 11. 1 Iohn 3. 8. destroy death, and him that had the  
power

power of death, that is, the Devill. Heb. 2, 14, 2 Tim. 1, 10, Iohn 12, 31, Hof. 13, 14, deliver us from the feare of both, Heb. 2, 14, Luke 1, 74, confirme the Testament or covenant of grace, which hee made with us, Heb. 9, 16, 17, and 13, 20, Zach. 9, 11, and obtaine for us the spirit of grace, Act. 2, 33, Gal. 3, 14, and 4, 4, 5, Betwixt the death and suffering of Christ and of the Martyrs, wee may observe these differences: 1. Christ his passion was an accursed punishment, Gal. 3, 13, the sufferings of the Martyrs and holy men, are onely chastisements or trials. 2. Christs passion was a meritorious sacrifice, Heb. 9, 14, the passions of the Martyrs are of no value to merit any thing. Rom. 8, 18. 3. As the finnes of the Elect were laid upon Christ, Levit. 16, 21, Esa. 53, 11, Heb. 9, 28, so was the punishment of their sinne for substance and kinde, though not for circumstance of place or continuance, Heb. 4, 15, and therefore hee suffered both in soule and body the wrath of God, which was due unto us for sinne, though hee suffered not every particular punishment of sinne, which every particular sinner, meeteth withall, Rom. 5, 19, Heb. 10, 14, But the Martyrs were not forsaken,

forfaken, though they were not delivered out of the hands of the persecutors, 4. Christ was in himfelfe pure and innocent, but he fuffered for our finnes; 2 Cor. 5. 21. the Martyrs were not free from fin, neither did they fuffer for the expiation of finne.

14. Untill the third day death had power and dominion over Christ, for fo long death kept afunder foule and body. Luke 24, 7. Matth. 17, 23, Acts 10. 40.

*Q. Did Christ alwaies abide under the power and dominion of death?*

*Ans.* No, for the power of death being y subdued, the third day he<sup>14</sup> rofe again, & afcended into heaven, and fitfeth<sup>15</sup> at the right hand of the Father, y Act. 2 31. & 1 Cor. 15. 4. & Mark. 16. 19.

*Expos.* 14. The refurrection of Christ is the firft degree of his exaltation, wherein his foule being joyned to the fame flefh that dyed, he was raifed up to life, 1 Cor. 15, 4. It was neceffary that hee should rife againe, in regard of the excellencie of his perfon, Act. 2. 24. The covenant which he had made with the Father, Pfa. 2, 6, 7. Ef. 53, 10, the dignity of his high office of eternall mediation, Pfa. 110, 6, 7, Rom.

Rom. 4. 25. and that the truth of those things, which were fore-told concerning the glory of the Messias, might be fulfilled. Christ by his divine power rose againe from the dead, Rom. 1. 4. 1 Pet. 3. 18. 1 Tim. 3. 16. Iohn 5. 21. and 10. 17, 18. Act. 2. 24. & 3. 15. Eph. 1. 17 20. Rom. 8. 11. not as a private, but as a publique person, Rom. 5. 14, 19. 1 Cor. 15. 45. Heb. 10. 14. 1 Pet. 2. 20, 21. thereby shewing that his satisfaction is fully absolute, Rom. 4. 25. and 6. 9. 10. The end of his resurrection was, that hee might prepare himselfe to the performance of the glorious functions of a Mediatour, and shew himselfe to be the conquerour of death, and the Lord of quick and dead, Rom. 14. 9. Act. 17. 31.

15. To sit at the right hand, is a manner of speech borrowed from earthly Princes, who use to set at their right hand such as they substitute to rule under them in their names, 1 King. 2. 19. And thereby is clearely noted that excellent glory, power, and dominion of Christ, received of the Father, whereby he doth execute his Kingly, Priestly, and Prophetical office in glory, Matth. 28. 18. Iohn 17. 2. Phil. 2. 9, 10. Psal. 110. 1.

*Q What*

*Q. What are the speciall parts of Christs Mediatorschip?*

*An.* He <sup>16</sup> is a *b* Prophet, *c* Priest, and a King, *b* Act. 3. 22. *c* Heb. 2. 17. *d* Psal. 110: 1.

*Expos. 16.* In the time of the law, Prophets, Priests, and Kings were annointed. 1 Reg. 19. 16. Exod. 28. 41. 1 Sam. 16. 13. who were types of Christ, truly annointed our Prophet, Priest, and King. Also our Mediator was to obtaine and purchase for us full redemption, and to bestow upon us righteousnesse, and eternall life obtained, and to shew unto us the way of salvation, which doe necessarily require this three-fold office of Christ.

*Q. Why was Christ a Prophet?*

*An.* To *e* reveale <sup>17</sup> unto us the way to everlasting life, *e* Luke 4. 18, 19.

*Expos. 17.* Before his comming in the flesh, our Saviour Christ made knowne the will of God to the Patriarks and Prophets, either immediatly, 2 Pet. 1. 21. 2 Sam. 23. 2. Gen. 3. 9, 10, 11. or by the ministerie of Angels, Gen. 31. 11. Iudg. 6. 12. 2 Kings 1. 3. and by the Patriarks and Prophets, hee informed the Church of the

old Testament in all points necessary to salvation, 2 Pet. 2. 5. 1 Pet. 3. 19. Iude 14. Luke 1. 70. Eph 2. 20. 1 Pet. 1. 11. In fullness of time taking upon him our nature, being after a most excellent manner sanctified by the Spirit, Luke 3. 5. Dan. 9. 24. furnished with all gifts necessarie, Matthew 3. 16, 17. Iohn 3. 34. Psal. 45. 8. Esa. 11. 2 Iohn 1. 18. and 3. 32. and called of the Father to this office, Luke 3. 21, 22. Matth. 3. 16, 17. Matth. 17. 5. hee did in his own person preach unto the Iewes, about the space of three yeares and a half, Acts 1. 1. Luke 21. 37. Heb. 1. 1. Dan. 9. 27. not altogether passing by the Samaritans and Canaanites, Iohn 4. 40. Matth. 15. 22. With admirable wisdome, Mark. 6. 2. Matth. 21. 23, 27. and 22. 46. ardent zeale, Iohn 2. 14. 17. Iohn 4. 34. excellent grace, Psalm. 45. 2, 3. Matth. 7. 29. Luke 4. 22. and 11. 27. singular meekenesse, Matthew 11. 29. and authority unusuall, Matth. 7. 29. Matth. 5. 21, 22. not respecting any mans person, Matth. 21. 42, 43. Mark 12. 14. hee interpreted the Law, Matth. 5. 21, 22, &c. and 19. 4, 5. reproved the corruptions of the Scribes and Pharisees, Iob. 2. 16. Matth. 23. 13. foretold  
some

some things that were to come, Matth. 10. 21: Luk. 19. 43, 44. Matth. 24. 3, &c. and taught the Gospel, or the last will of God, concerning the salvation of man, Esay 61. 1, 2 Luke 4. 18. illustrating his doctrine for the most part by Parables and similitudes, as the people were able to beare it, Matth 13. 3. Mark. 4. 33. and confirming that which hee taught, by the Scriptures of the old Testament, Iohn 5. 46. Matth. 22. 32. Luke 24. 26, 27. 44, 45. and holinesse of life exactly answering to his doctrine, with divers signes of all kinds, Ioh. 3. 2. and 5. 36. Ioh. 6. 61, 62. and 2. 25 Matth. 9. 4. Ioh. 9. 6. and 11. 43 45. and that most cruell and bitter death, which for the truth of God hee did voluntarily undergoe, 1 Tim. 6. 13 After his Ascension our Saviour taught his Church by his Apostles and Ministers, Eph. 4. 11, 12. Acts 10. 41 42. The Apostles being fully and perfectly instructed by Christ himselfe, in those things which concerne the Kingdome of God, Acts 1. 3. Iohn 15. 15. and 17. 8. and extraordinarily furnished with gifts, and infal- libly assisted by the Spirit; Acts 2. 3. 4. Ioh. 14. 26. and 16. 13. were sent forth to

preach the whole counsell of God, so farre as concernes man, and the meane<sup>s</sup> of his salvation, Acts 20. 27. Matth. 28. 20. 1 Cor. 2. 9, 10, 11, 1 Ioh. 1. 3. Rom. 1. 16. unto all nations, Matth. 28. 18, 19. Mark. 16. 15. Their doctrine they confirmed both by the Prophets of the old Testament, Acts 26. 22. and 28. 23. 2 Pet. 1. 18, 19. and by divers signes and wonders which God wrought by them, Heb. 2. 3, 4. Mar. 16. 20. In the dayes also, and since the death of the Apostles, our Saviour doth execute his Prophetickall office by his ordinary Ministers, whom he hath commanded us to heare, so long as they preach according to the Scriptures, Ephes. 4. 11, 12. Luke 10. 15. So that Christ is the Author of the Doctrine which hee taught, Ministers are the Instruments of Christ, to teach not their owne, but his Doctrine, 2 Cor. 5. 20. Job 33. 23. The fruit of this office is the restoring of knowledge decayed in the first fall of man, and the manifestation of divine mysteries unknowne to the world, Rom. 16. 25, 26. Eph. 3. 9. Col. 1. 26, 27.

*Q. Why was Christ a<sup>18</sup> Priest?*

*Ans.*

An. To purchase for us righteousnesse and life eternall, Heb. 5. 9.

*Expos.* 18. Christ is our high Priest, not after the order of *Aaron*, but after the order of Melchisedech, Psalm. 110. 4. *Aaron* was of the tribe of Levi, Heb. 7. 4. his stock and lineage was knowne, Exod. 6. 16. 18. 20. hee was compassed with infirmities, mortall, a sinner, and had need to offer for himselfe, and for his owne sinnes, Heb. 7. 28. and 5. 2, 3, 4. and 9. 7. but Christ was of the tribe of Iudah, Heb. 7. 14. without Father touching his humanity, without Mother touching his Deitie, Heb. 7. 3. immortall and continuing for ever, holy, harmlesse, undefiled, who had no need to offer for himselfe, but offered himselfe for the people only, Hebr. 7. 25, 26, 27. Materiall oyle was poured upon *Aaron*, at his consecration, Levit. 8. 12. but Christ was annointed with the holy Ghost, Acts 10. 31. *Aaron* was instituted without an oath, but Christ with an oath. Heb. 7. 10. 21. 28. Psa. 110. 4. The Priesthood of *Aaron* was typicall, Hebr. 10. 2, 3. not availeable to take away sinne, Heb. 9. 14, 15. but the Priesthood of Christ is true and reall, contain-

ning the very Image and body of things  
themselves perfect to abolish sinne, and  
to obtaine eternall Redemption, Heb. 10.  
1. 5. 11. Hebr. 9. 12. 14. The Leviticall  
Priesthood was to be abrogated, Heb. 8.  
13. but Christs Priesthood is to continue  
for ever; Heb. 7. 24. *Aaron* died and  
had successours, Heb. 7. 23. but Christ suc-  
ceeded none; hath no successours, but is  
our onely and unchangeable high Priest  
for ever, Heb. 7. 3. *Aaron* and his succes-  
sours offered the bodies and bloud of  
beasts. Heb. 9. 12. 14. but Christ him-  
selfe is both the Priest and sacrifice, Eph.  
5. 25. Heb. 9. 26. and 10. 10. They offered  
oftentimes one manner of sacrifice, but  
Christ hath offered himselfe once for all,  
Heb. 7. 27. and 9. 25, 26. and 10. 12. 14.  
1 Pet. 3. 18. *Aaron* and his successours  
entred into the Tabernacle made with  
hands, Heb. 8. 5. and 9. 6. but Christ is  
entred into the very heavens, Heb. 9. 11.  
24. and 4. 14. *Aaron* and his successours  
were Priests only, but Christ is both  
King and Priest, Heb. 7. 1, 2. *Aaron* and  
his successours were but Ministers, but  
Christ is the Author of salvation, Hebr. 5.  
9. All which doe shew the absolutenesse,  
per.

with an Exposition upon the same. 91  
perfection, and excellencie of Christ his  
Priesthood.

Q. What are the functions of his Priest-  
ly office?

An. Offering <sup>19</sup> up *g* him'selfe a sacrifi-  
ce once for all, and <sup>20</sup> making request  
for us, *g* Heb. 5. 1. and 9. 26. and 7. 25.

Expof. 19. Christ through the eternall  
Spirit, Heb. 9. 14. offered up his soule and  
body, as a sweet smelling sacrifice to the  
Father, Eph. 5. 2. once for all, Heb. 10. 12.  
wherby he was consecrated, and did enter  
into Heaven, presenting him'selfe before  
the Father for us, Heb. 9. 24. and 10. 20.

20. Christs intercession is his most  
gracious will, fervently and unmoveably  
desiring, that all his members for the per-  
petuall vertue of his sacrifice, may be ac-  
cepted of the Father, Rom. 8. 34. This is  
both universall and particular, heavenly  
and glorious, ever effectuall, no way reci-  
procall, and tendered only for the vertue  
of his sacrifice.

Q. Why was Christ a <sup>20</sup> King?

An. To <sup>21</sup> byrde *h* and subdue all  
his enemies, but *i* to <sup>22</sup> gather and *k* go-  
verne <sup>23</sup> his Clect & chosen, *h* Psal. 110. 1.  
Col. 2. 15. 1 Cor. 15. 28. 1 Iohn 10. 16.

Hag. 2: 7. k Ezek. 34: 23, 24.

*Expos.* 20. The Kingly office of Christ is his spirituall, eternall, and absolute dominion, Luke 17. 20. Iohn 18. 36. Dan. 2. 44. and 7. 14. Heb. 1. 8. Rev. 3. 7. whereby being appointed by the Father, Psal. 2. 6, 7. and 45. 7. Psal. 110. 2. Matth. 11. 27. Act. 2. 33. Lord of all things in heaven and earth, Heb. 2. 7, 8. and peculiarly King and Head of his Church, Eph. 1. 21, 22. hee doth confound and destroy all his enemies, but doth gather and governe his Elect, Hos. 1. 7. Esa. 33: 22. by his word and spirit, for their salvation and the glory of God, Esa. 32. 15. and 59. 21. 1 Theff. 1. 5.

21. The enemies of Christ, are Sathan and all his angels, with all their works, to wit, sinne and death, Gen. 3. 15. Eph. 2. 2. 2 Cor. 4. 4. 2 Cor. 6. 15. to which wee must adde all wicked men, who be the instruments of Sathan, Iohn 8. 44. 1 Ioh. 3. 8. amongst whom the Antichrist of Rome is chiefe, 2 Theff. 2. 3. These enemies Christ hath already overcome in his owne person, Eph. 4. 8. Col. 2. 14. Iohn 12. 31. hee doth daily bridle and repress by his wisdom, power, word, and spirit,

rit, Luk. 10. 11. 9. Luk. 2. 34. Rev. 12. 5. and 2. 27. 2 Cor. 10. 4, 5. and hee will perfectly subdue at the day of judgement. 1 Cor. 15. 25. adjudging the devill and all his partakers to eternall condemnation, Matth. 25. 46. and utterly abolishing sinne and death, 1 Cor. 15. 26. Further it is to be noted, that Christ as a Mediator in the execution of his Kingly office, doth outwardly call some wicked and ungodly men, Matth. 22. 1. 14. and 20. 16. prescribe a law how they ought to walk. Jam. 4. 12. bestow many good things upon them both spirituall and temporall, though not such as accompany salvation, Heb. 6. 4, 5. Math. 13. 19, 20, 21. Luk. 8. 13, 14. Job 22. 18. and inflict divers punishments upon them in this life, and the life to come, for their sinne and disobedience, Matth. 13. 12. and 25. 28. Esa. 6. 10. 2 Theff. 2. 10. 11. Luk. 16. 23.

22. Christ doth not only by his word call his Elect to faith, repentance, and the participation of the Covenant of grace, Mark. 1. 14, 15. Matth. 11. 28. but he doth also effectually move them by his Spirit to repent and beleve, Psal. 110. 3. 2 Theff. 2. 13, 14. Eph. 3. 16, 17.

33. The functions of Christs Kingly office

office appearing to the government of his Elect, are; first, the prescription of lawes, according to which his subjects ought to beleve and live; which stands not only in appointing the faithfull by the Ministerie of his Word to live godly, justly, and soberly; but also in writing his Law in their hearts by his holy Spirit, and inabling them by the same Spirit to doe in some measure what hee requireth, Tit. 2. 11, 12. Ier. 31. 33. Ezech. 36. 27. Iohn 1. 16. (2) The communication and bestowing of all good things upon them appertaining to this or a better life, so farre as hee knowes it needfull or profitable: under which wee are to comprehend the removing of things hurtfull, and the defending of his subjects against them, Psalm. 68. 18. Iam. 1. 16, 17. Psal. 23. 1, 2, 3. 1 Cor. 12. 8, 9, 10, 11. Eph. 1. 7. Act. 26. 18. Matth. 9. 6. Gal. 4. 4, 5. Rom. 8. 15, 16. 2 Cor. 12. 9. Phil. 4. 13. Luke 22. 32. Ioh. 17. 11, 12. 22, 23. 1 Iohn 4. 4. Gen. 9. 26, 27. Psalm. 81. 13, 14. Acts 4. 16. and 5. 13. Psalm. 34. 9, 10. Tit. 1. 15. Romans 14. 14, 15. Esa. 27. 7. Ier. 46. 28. (3.) The receiving of his Elect unto himselfe, and the giving of eternall life unto them, ha-

ving

ving pronounced sentence on their side,  
Matth. 25. 46.

Q. What benefit doe wee receive by the  
death and resurrection of Christ?

An. Wee are redeemed from the  
24 guilt, / punishment, 25 and power *m* of  
sinne, and shall be raised up at the last  
day, / Col. 1. 14. *m* Luke 1. 74. Tit. 2. 14.  
1 Cor. 15. 13.

Expos. 24. Christ hath paid our debts,  
and answered whatsoever the Law did  
require at our hands, 1 Pet. 2. 21. 24. and  
layd downe his life according to the will  
of his Father, Ioh. 10. 15. so that the Law  
hath nothing against us, Col. 2. 14. Christs  
death must needs be acceptable, Eph. 5. 2.  
and consequently we ore not bound over  
to punishment.

25. Punishment is inflicted because of  
sinne, Iob 4. 8. Proverb. 22. 8. and 28. 18.  
Hos. 10. 13. and 14. 1. being freed from  
sinne, wee are not lyable to judgement,  
2 Sam. 12. 13. Ier. 4. 14. Ezech. 18. 32. It  
stands not with the justice of God, be-  
ing once fully satisfied, to require a se-  
cond payment at our hand, Gen. 18. 25.  
Matth. 3. 17. neither will it stand with  
his glorious mercy, the honour of Christ  
who

who is a perfect Redeemer, Tit. 2. 14. the price of his blood, 1 Cor. 6. 21: nor with our faith in praying for full pardon of all our debts, Matth. 6. 12. or our peace with God, Rom. 5. 1. nor yet with right reason, that the guilt of sinne should be removed, and yet punishment for sinne inflicted.

*Q. How are we redeemed from the guilt and punishment of sinne?*

An. God the Father accepting the death of Christ, as a full <sup>n</sup> ransome and satisfaction to his iustice, doth freely discharge and acquit us from all our sins. <sup>n</sup> Rom. 3. 24, 25. Col. 1. 14. Eph. 1. 7.

*Q. How are wee redeemed from the power and tyrannie of sinne?*

An. Christ by <sup>26</sup> his <sup>o</sup> death killeth sinne in us, and by his <sup>27</sup> resurrection doth quicken us to newnes of life, <sup>o</sup> Ro. 6. 3, 4.

*Expos. 26.* Christ by his death did conquer sinne; and the old man in us, is truly said to be crucified, dead, and buried in and with the body of Christ, wee being ingrafted into the similitude of his death, Col. 2. 12, 20.

27. Having communion with Christ in his life, wee are raised up to a spirituall life,

life, Rom. 8. 11. and have our conversation in heaven, Phil. 3. 20. But this life is only begun here, and groweth by degrees, being perfected in heaven.

*Q. What are the benefits of Christs ascention?*

*A.* The leading p of captivity captive, the giving of gifts unto men, the pouring q his spirit upon his people, and preparing r a place for them, p Eph. 4. 8. 11. q Acts 2. 16, 17. r Ioh. 14. 3.

*Q. What are the benefits of his intercession?*

*An.* The persons of the faithfull doe alwaies remaine iust, and their woorks s acceptable in the sight of God; hereby also they are defended against the accusation of all their enemies, s 1 Pet: 2. 5. Gen. 4. 4. Exod. 28. 38.

*Q. How will the knowledge of these things work in the heart of him whom God saves?*

*An.* It brings him to a serious & consideration of his owne estate, to u grieve for sinne, and the feare of Gods displeasure, whereby w the heart is x broken and humbled. & Jer. 8. 6, 7. Luke 15. 17. u Acts 2. 37. w Acts 9. 6.

*Expos.* 28. The heart is broken and humbled, when it is cast downe with the sight of sinne, Psalm. 51. 17. bruised with the weight of Gods wrath, and melted away for feare, Psalm. 119, 120. 1 Kings 22. 19. knowing that God hath advantage against him, and that hee is worthy to be condemned.

*Q. What else will this knowledge work?*

*Ans.* It will bring *x* a man <sup>29</sup> to confesse his sinne, highly to *y* prize Christ, and hunger <sup>30</sup> after *z* him, untill he obtaine his desire, *x* Luk. 15. 18. *y* Math. 13. 44. *z* Esa. 55. 1 Ioh. 7. 37.

*Expos.* 29. Hee will acknowledge his sinnes to God as particularly as hee can. 1 Tim. 1. 13. and with sighes and groanes for pardon and forgivenesse, Romans 8. 26.

30. Hunger after Christ must be fervent, as a thirstie man longeth for drink; and continuall, never giving over till the desire be obtained. With this desire there is alwayes joynd an high prizing of Christ, and an advised willingnesse to forgoe all things for Christs sake, Phil. 1. 22, 23. with 3. 7, 8.

*Q. How are wee made partakers of Christ*

Christ with all his benefits?

An. By faith alone, *a* Ioh. 3. 16. and  
1. 12. Act. 13. 39.

*Expof. 1.* By faith alone we are ingrafted into Christ, Rom. 11. 20. receive him, Iohn 6. 56. have communion with him, Rev. 3. 20. and so are made partakers of all his benefits, Ioh. 3. 36. also faith is the condition of the covenant of grace, Acts 16. 31. Iohn 3. 18. Mark. 16. 16. Iohn 20. 31. Rom. 4. 3. 5.

*Q* What is faith?

An. *a* relying upon Christ alone for salvation, *b* Psal. 2. 12. Act. 16. 31.

*Expof. 2.* Bare assenting to the truth of Gods promises, upon the credit of the revealer, is not true and justifying faith, Matth. 21. 32. Iohn 2. 23. Luke 24, 25. Luk. 8. 13. but when the poore soule doth cast it selfe upon the free promise of God made in Iesus Christ, for pardon of sinne, it doth truly beleve, Acts 9. 42. Ioh. 14. 1 Iohn 5. 24. with Rom. 4. 5. Esa. 28. 16. with Rom. 9. 33. Acts 18. 8. with Rom. 10. 10. 11. This faith is certaine, Mat. 16. 18. though mixed with many doubtings, Luk. 1. 18. and 17. 5. Mark. 9. 24. and continuall, Luke 22. 31. 32. though often  
shaken.

shaken, Luke 24. 21. A full perswasion seemes rather an effect of a strong faith, Rom. 4. 21. than the nature of true faith, joy is a fruit of faith, 1 Pet. 1. 8. Acts 8. 6, 7, 8. Rom. 5. 4. but not an inseparable companion thereof, a man may have true faith, and feele little or no comfort, Psal. 22. 1. and 31. 10. and 77. 2.

*Q. What is the ground of faith?*

*An.* The free & promises of God made in Christ, concerning the forgiveness of sins, and eternall righteousness, c Rom. 4. 18. Heb. 11. 1.

*Expos* 3. Temporall blessings, Eccl. 9. 1, 2, civill vertues, Luke 18. 12, 13, 14, a generall notice that Christ will save the Elect, Matth. 13. 20, 21. sense, reason, experience, feeling, Psalm. 10. 1. and 51. 12. are not the grounds of faith; but only the promises, which God of his grace hath made unto us in Christ, which ought to be received, because God that cannot lie hath spoken them, Tit. 1. 2. 2 Tim. 2. 13.

*Q. How is faith wrought in us?*

*An.* Inwardly by the 4 spirit as the Authour, outwardly by the preaching of the Word, and 5 Catechising, as the instru

instrument thereof. *d* Act. 16. 14. *e* Rom. 10. 14. Heb. 5. 11, 12, and 6, 1, 2:

*Expos. 4.* Faith is the gift of God. Phil. 1. 29. and a grace supernaturall: a man of himselfe can no more beleeve, than a corrupt fountaine can send forth sweet waters, 1 Cor. 2, 14.

5. By Catechising, understand a pure, plaine, briefe, and orderly instruction of the people in the chiefe grounds of Christian religion, 1 Cor. 2. 4. 1 Cor. 3. 1: 1 Pet. 3. 15. Heb. 6. 1, 2. Rom. 6. 17. so that the people may clearly and manifestly see the way into salvation; and may know how to make use both of the Law, and of the Gospell, for their humiliation and comfort, understanding how one thing dependeth upon another, goeth before, or followeth after.

Hereby Christians are inabled to referre that which they read to some head, readily to apply what they heare to fit purpose, try it, and have it in readinesse, in the time of need. In a word, to profite by the publique ministerie, Heb. 5. 11, 12. and to know how to goe forward in godlinesse, in an holy methode. To say  
H nothing

nothing, that Catechisme is profitable to  
informe the judgement, reforme the af-  
fection, and quicken both, to the dutie  
of a Godly life.

*Q. How doth the Word worke faith  
in us?*

*An.* By shewing us *f*our misery, and  
the true *g* means of our recoverie, en-  
couraging us *h* being<sup>o</sup> humbled, to re-  
ceive the *p*romises of the Gospel. *f* Rom  
7.7. Gal. 3 22. *g* Gal. 4.4 5. *h* Mat. 11. 28  
El. 61. 1. 2, 3. Rev. 22. 17.

*Expos.* 6. The word commandeth the  
humbled to beleeve, promiset<sup>h</sup> them  
comfort, Math 9 13. Luke 15. 32. setteth  
forth the necessity, and excellency of  
faith, John 3. 18. 36. the danger of unbe-  
liefe. Mark. 16. 15. John 12 48. Act. 13 46.  
the tender mercies and compassions of the  
Lord, Psa. 103. 8. 12. and how he inviteth,  
perswadeth, and intreateth him to beleeve.  
2 Cor. 5 20.

*Q. How doth the Spirit worke by the  
word?*

*An.* It doth teach us wisdome: to ap-  
ply things generally spoken particular-  
ly to our selves, secretly upholdeth *k*a  
gainst despaire, *l*irreth up *l*in us good  
desires

desires, doth *m* soften the heart, and draw  
us to call upon Christ for salvation,  
before we have the falling of comfort,  
Ezek 36. 27. 31. & Psa. 51. 12. / Phi. 2. 13.  
Ezek. 11. 19. and 36. 26, n Ioh. 6, 44,  
Math. 11. 28. 29.

*Q* By what meanes is faith encreased?

*An.* By hearing *p* the same word  
preached or catechized, and likewise  
by earnest prayer, *p* 1 Pet. 2. 2. 9 Luke  
17. 5.

*Expos. 7.* Hearing the word preached,  
is ordained of God as a meanes to in-  
crease knowledge, Math 15. 10. Prov. 14  
5. and 8. 33. Psalm 73. 16, 17. 1 Cor. 1. 21.  
and 14. 24, 25, to rectifie the judgement,  
to give counsell in doubtfull cases, Psalm.  
19. 24. Psalm. 73. 16, 17. to perfect the  
faith of the weake, Rom. 10. 8, 1 Thess.  
2. 10. to make stable the strong, Acts 20.  
2. Rom. 1. 11, 12. to comfort them that  
are in heaviness, 1 Thessa. 2. 11, and 3. 2  
and 5. 14. to raise them that are fallen,  
Sam. 12. 12, 13. Gal. 6. 1 to call back  
them that wander. Es. 30. 21. to stirre up  
the graces of Gods Spirit, Cant. 4. 16  
1 Pet. 1. 13. to refresh the soules of the  
saints with sweet and heavenly conso-  
lations,

lations, Cant. 1, 1, Psal. 119, 162. Col. 2. 2, and to build both weake and strong unto perfect holnes. Eph. 4, 11, 1 Pet. 2, 1 Tim. 4, 16, Iam. 1, 21.

8. As liberty to pray is a sweete priuiledge, Eph. 2, 18, because thereby wee doe, and may continually commune with the Lord after a familiar manner, 2 Sam. 7, 18, Pl. 5, 12, 3, & lay open our griefes into his bosome, 1 Sam. 1, 15. Psal. 130, 1, 2, and 61. 1, 2, we doe testifie our dutifull affection to him, Luke 15, 18, and become helpers to others. Rom. 15. 30, Ph. 1, 19, 2 Thes. 3, 1, Col. 4, 12. so it doth adde strength to faith, Luke 17. 5, for it gives life to the graces of God that are in us: by it we obtaine at the hand of God what good wee stand in need of, Matth. 7. 7, Iai. 65, 24, wee grow better acquainted with God, Gen. 1. 8. 23. 27. Iam. 4. 8, wee fight manfully against corruption, Eph. 6. 18 and learne to direct our selues in a godly life: By it crosses are prevented, removed, or sanctified, Ps. 3, 4, Ps. 37. 1, 6, all things are sanctified 1 Tim. 4. 5. and wee kept that we fall not into temptat'on. Matth. 26, 41, yea often wee obtaine much more good than wee desire

with an Exposition upon the same. 105  
of fire or respect, 1 King. 3. 13. Eph. 3, 20.  
that prayer is a key to open the dore of  
Gods treasure-house, Math. 7. 7. a present  
remedy to an oppressed minde, Psal. 6. 1. 8.  
and 31, 21. 22. a preserver of the godly  
minde, 2 Thess. 3. 5. a giver of strength to  
the weake, Eph. 3. 14. 16. and an especiall  
meanes to make a man fit, to live in every  
state, Col. 1. 9. 10.

Q How must we heare that we may get  
profite?

An. 1. With reverence, meekenes<sup>10</sup>,  
longing<sup>11</sup>, a longing<sup>12</sup> desire, to learne,  
and giving<sup>13</sup> credit to the truth. 1 Es. 66  
2. 1 Sam. 1. 24. Math. 13. 44. 1 Pet. 2. 21.  
Heb. 4. 1. 2.

Expos. 9. Reverence is an affection of the  
heart, arising from an apprehension of Gods  
Majestic, and our own vil-nesse, whereby  
wee are prepared to heare the word with  
humility, feare and attention. Act. 10. 33.  
1 Thess. 2. 13. Ioh. 12. 48. and 11. 28. Heb.  
11. 28. Iob. 42. 5. 6. Psal. 62. 11. Act. 16. 14.

10. Meekenesse is an affection, where-  
by wee are contented to beare the re-  
bukes of the Law, and to have the duties  
of the word to bee pressed upon us.  
1 Sam. 3. 17. 2 King. 20. 19. Psal. 25. 9. 12.

Heb. 13. 22.

11. Joy is a delight of the soule for some good thing that is present, Act. 8. 8. Exod. 6. 9.

12. A longing desire to learne, is an eager appetite to bee further acquainted with the knowledge of the truth, that wee may reape fruit, and benefit by the same, Pro. 27. 7, Pro. 2. 3, 4, 9, Psal. 119, 34, 35. 40.

13. To give credit to the truth, is to beleeve the whole truth and every part of it, as true and certaine, both to others and to our selves, so as wee expect the benefit promised therein, and the effecting and making good of whatsoever is therein spoken, 2 Chron. 20, 20, Esa. 7. 9.

Q. How else?

A. We must & meditate 14 of that we heare, apply it to our selves, conferre of it with 16 others, and with diligence 17 set about the practice of what is required. & Psal. 1, 2, and 119, 1, 4, 15, 1 Job. 4. 53. & Esa. 2, 3, Luke 2, 15.

Expos. 14. Meditation is the very life of reading and hearing, 1 Tim. 4. 15. and it's separation of our selves purposely from other matters, that we may seriously

ly think of what hath beene taught, Gen. 24, 63, that it may be setled in the minde, and worke upon the affections, Ier 8, 6, for which end wee must joyne examination and prayer. Luke 18, 1.

15. To apply the word to our selves, is to lay it to our heart as concerning us, 1 Cor. 11, 28. 2 Cor. 13, 5, that the commandements may guide us, the threatnings may humble us for sinnes past, 2 Sam. 12, 12, 13, and 24, 10, and affright us from sinne to come, the exhortations may incite us to our duty with cheerefulnesse, Eccles. 12 11, and the promises may be for our support and comfort, whether they be in plaine speeches, or mysticall prophecies, Psal. 119, 71, 72, 52, ver.

16. Wee must communicate to others what wee have learned, and learne of others what wee are ignorant of, doe not well understand, or have forgotten; and by admonition, exhortation, and comfort, help to strengthen and edifice one another, Heb. 3, 13. Iob 16, 4, 5. Rom. 1, 11, 12. Lev. 19, 17. Prov. 27, 6, 1 Thess. 5. 11, 14. Iud. verse 20.

17. Inwardly wee must heartily desire and strive, and outwardly wee must be

carefull without delays to take all opportunities of doing the good that God requireth, 2 Cron. 17. 6. and 19. 3. and 27. 6. Luke 8. 15. being humbled for negligence and sinne past; watching and fighting against corruption for the time to come, 1 Cor. 9. 26, 27. cherishing one another with befitting comforts, Esay 40. 1.

*Q. What is prayer?*

*An.* It is a calling upon God in the name of Christ with the heart, & sometimes with the voice, according to his will for our selves and others, *a* Exod. 14. 15. 1 Sam: 1. 13, 15, *b* 1 Ioh. 5. 14.

*Expof. 1.* The Commandements, Psal. 105. 4. and 81. 10. Esa. 55. 6. 1 Theff. 5. 17. Rom. 12. 12. promises, Mark. 7. 7. and 21, 28. Mark. 11. 24. Psal. 91. 15. Es. 65. 24. Jer. 29. 12. Esa. 49. 17 Iohn 16. 23. threatenings of the Lord, Zeph. 3. 12. Ezech. 22. 30. 31. Dan. 9. 13. 14. Math. 26. 41. the examples of Christ himfelfe, and all his Apostles, Luk. 3. 21. and 9. 18. 29. Acts 1. 14 24. and 2 42. and 4. 24. and 9. 11. 14. 2 Tim. 2. 19. 22. our owne necessities, Iud. 3. 9. 15. and 4. 3. Esa. 26. 16. Psalm. 18. 6. Phi. 4. 6. and successe of prayer, Psal. 120. 1.

*Psalm*

Psalme 3.4. Psal. 32.5.6. are sufficient motives and reasons to induce us to the practise of this duty.

2. It is lawfull to use the voyce in prayer to quicken our dulnesse, to inflame our devotion, prevent rovings, and to edifie our brethren, Zeph. 3.9. Psal. 88.

*Q. To whom must we pray?*

*An. To God alone in the name of Christ.* Ioh. 16.23. Col. 3.17.

*Expos. 3.* God onely is every where present, Iere. 23. 23. 24. knoweth all hearts, 1 King. 8.39. Ier. 17.9. Psalm. 94.9, 10. heareth all prayers, Neh. 1.6. Psa. 65.2 Psalm 66. 19. 20. is most able to helpe, Psalm 57 2. Eph. 2.20 prayer is a divine worship, Psal. 50.15. and 44.20.21. a spirituall sacrifice. Mal. 1. 11. Psalm. 141.2. Revel. 8.4. and 5. 8. Exod. 22. 20. and in God only we ought to beleefe, Ioh. 14. 1. therefore hee onely is to bee called upon, Rom. 10. 13. 14. as the very Hea-then saw by the light of nature, Ionah. 1. 5.

4. To pray in the name of Christ, is not rudely and customarily to say these words, Through Iesus Christ our Lord, &c. but in the confidence of the merits  
and

and intercession of Christ, to call on our heavenly Father, Dan. 9. 17. Since the fall of man, none are called to come to God or have promise to speed, but in the name of a Mediator, Ioh. 14. 6. Heb. 4. 16. 1 Tim. 2. 5. 1 Ioh. 2. 1. Rom. 8. 33. Heb. 7. 25. in Christ alone we have access to the throne of grace, Eph. 2. 18. and 3. 12. Angels or Saints departed doe not present our prayers before God: for Christ onely is our Mediator and high Priest, who getteth our prayers acceptance before God, Heb. 1. 3. and 4. 14. Revel. 8. 3. and to present our prayers before God, and to procure them acceptance with God, is in phrase of Scripture all one, Dan. 10. 12. Act. 10. 4. 13.

*Q. Ought we not in prayer to make particular confession of our finnes?*

*An. Yea so farre as we d can come to the knowledge of them, and this we must doe with griefe, & hatred, and shame, freely f accusing and condemning our selves before God, with g broken and contrite hearts. d 1 Sam. 12. 19. Ps. 19. 13. f Neh. 8. 9. g Neh. 9. 33. g Zach. 12. 10.*

*Expos. 4. Sorrow for sinne must bee hearty and continuall, and as much as may*

may be, particular. Psal. 102. 4, especially for the finnes which have made great breaches in the soule, Psal. 51, 1, 2, 4, yea, sinne should be our chiefe sorrow.

5. The soule should abhorre sinne, especially for the loathsomnesse of it, Psal. 97, 10, Psal. 119, 163, Iob 42. 6, Amos 5. 15. darkning Gods glory, Gen. 39. 9, breaking his Law, soiling all it toucheth, 2 Cor. 1. 7, Iam 1, 21, Hag. 2. 12, 13.

6. God is infinite in Majestic, Psal. 86. 10. and of pure eyes, Hab. 1, 13, a man therefore should blush at the remembrance and confession of finnes before God, Esra. 9, 6, and Dan. 9, 7, seeing his face would be covered with shame, if a man should know them.

Q. What are the parts of prayer?

An. Petition and thanksgiving.

Q. What is petition?

An. It is a Prayer, wherein we desire the preventing *h* or *i* remobing of things hurtfull, and the obtaining of things needfull, either for this life, or that which is to come, *b* Esay 37, 20, Matth. 9. 13. *i* Psal. 6. 1, 2, 3, 4.

Q. How may we make our requests that we may be heard?

A. With

An. **W**ith *k* understanding <sup>6</sup> / *f*ailing <sup>7</sup>  
 of our wants <sup>8</sup>, *r*ebvency, <sup>9</sup> *r*everence,  
 o hope to <sup>10</sup> speed, and *p* love <sup>11</sup>. *1* Cor.  
 14. 15. / *M*ath. 11. 28. *m* *I*am. 5. 17. *7* *E*ccl.  
 5. 2. o *1* Tim. 2. 8. *p* *M*at 6. 14. *M*ar. 11. 25.

*E*xpos. 6. Blinde devotion is not plea-  
 sing to God, *P*rov. 19. 2. *A*cts 17. 22, 23,  
 24. *I*oh. 3. 22. who requireth to be served  
 with the minde, *M*at. 22. 37. *L*uke 10. 27.  
 We must therefore know the will of God,  
 appearing by his commandements, pro-  
 mises, threatnings, and the approved pra-  
 ctises of the Saints; that wee must desire  
 and pray for, and onely so as wee know  
 Gods word doth warrant us, *1* *I*oh, 5. 14.  
 Our words, matter, and meaning in pray-  
 er, are meet to be understood.

7. In prayer we should feele sinne as a  
 burthen, *I*er. 31. 18. *E*say 63. 17. and be  
 pinched with our want of gr<sup>ce</sup>, *P*salm 51.  
 10, 11, 12. *I*am. 1. 5. which ariseth from  
 a consideration of Gods iudgements due  
 to sinne, *E*zra. 9. 6, 7. and of the necessi-  
 tie of saying grace, *L*uke 17. 5. *2* *C*or.  
 12. 9.

8. As the things wee begge are more  
 or lesse excellent, and of fit use for us, so  
 wee must be more or lesse eager to ob-  
 taine,

taine, Psal. 51, 1, 2, 3, 9, and 80, 1, 2, 3, 4. which ariseth from a consideration of the necessity and excellency of what wee desire, Psal. 79, 8, 9, and 86, 1. Psal. 102, 13, 14, as also from a burning zeale of Gods glory, and hearty love of our brethren, Esa. 62, 1. Psal. 122, 6, 7, 1. Opposite hereunto is hypocrisie and vaine babling, Mat. 6, 5, 6, 7.

9. Considering Gods excellent Majesty, we may not rashly conceive or utter any thing before him, but with reverence, Gen. 18, 27, 30, 32. which is an unfained abasement of the minde proceedidg from a consideration of Gods divine Maiestie, and our owne indignity, Luke 15, 21. Gen. 32, 10. Esr. 9, 6. Heb. 12, 28.

10. Having a promise from God that hee will grant our requests, Psalm. 34, 19. Es. 30, 19, and 58, 9. wee must beleeve his word, for he is true and faithfull, Heb. 11, 11, 2. Tim. 2, 23. If hope to speed accompanie not our prayers, they are vaine, Iam. 1, 6. but yet this hope is weake, feeble, and many times seemes to be overwhelmed in the godly, Psalm. 13, 1, 2. and 31, 22, and 77, 7, 8, 9.

11. By love is meant, that wee must forgive our enemies, and carry an hearty affection to the children of God. Eph. 4, 32, Col. 3, 12, 13.

*Q. What is thanksgiving?*

An. It is a prayer wherein we render & thanke to God for his generall goodnesse, and also particular & favours, 1 Sam. 2, 1, & Psal. 136, 1, and 103, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.

*Expos. 2.* Motives to this dutie there be many. It is an excellent, Psalm 92, 1, ancient Iob. 38, 7. spirituall dutie, Heb. 13, 15, Col. 3, 16, 1 Pet. 2, 5, to be continued in Heaven when other duties cease, Rev. 19, 3, 4, 5, acceptable to God, 1 Thess. 5, 18, Psal. 147, 1, comely for the Saints, Psal. 33, 1. and 147, 1, practised by the Angels, Luke 2, 13, setting on worke all the graces of God in us, psal. 103, 1, 2, 3. the end of Gods benefits, Psalme 13, 6, & 118, 29, of our life, and all our services, Esa. 8, 19, and the ready way to obtaine what we stand in need of, psal. 50, 23. The meanes of true thankfulness, are a due consideration of our owne vilenesse, and a serious meditation and remembrance of Gods benefits, 2 Sam. 7. 18, 1, Chro:

with an Exposition upon the same. 115

16. 16. 17. Psal. 103. 1. 2. 3. &c. 1 Sam. 25.  
32. Gen. 24. 27. Luke 7. 15. Rom. 7. 25.  
with a perswasion that God hath in love  
bestowed them upon us, Psalme 116.  
12. 14.

*Q. What things are required in Thanks-  
giving?*

**An.** Love : to God and joy in his  
mercy, a desire to draw others to obey  
and glorifie God, and an y endeabour to  
proceed in godlinesse our selves, & Psalm.  
18. 1. 2. & Psal. 126. 1. 2. and 104. 34. & Psal.  
34. 11. & 66. 16. y Deut. 6. 10. 11. 1, 2, 1, 3.  
1 Sam 12. 4.

*Q. What rule of direction is there, ac-  
cording to which wee ought to frame our  
prayer?*

**An.** The generall Direction is the  
word of God, the more especiall is the  
Lords prayer?

*Expos. 1.* The Lords prayer is so a di-  
rection, that it may bee lawfully, and  
laudably used as a Prayer, Math. 6. 9. &c.  
Luke 11. 2. &c. Num. 6. 23. 24. Psal. 22. 1.  
and 92. 1. It is called the Lords prayer, be-  
cause the Lord Iesus taught it to his Dis-  
ciples, Luke 11. 12.

*Q. How many things are to be considered*

*in the Lords prayer?*

An. *Thre, the Preface, the Prayer it selfe, and the Conclusion.*

*Q. Which is the preface?*

A. *Our Father which art in heaben.*

*Q. What learneyou out of this preface?*

A. *That God is our a<sup>2</sup> Father by grace b and adoption, through Jesus Christ, c glorious in Majesty, & d infinite in power, that both e can and f hath promised to helpe us. a Esay 63. 16. b Rom. 8. 15. 16. Gal. 4. 4. 5. c Psal. 47. 2. d Psal. 115. 3. e Eph. 3. 20. f Psal. 50. 15.*

*Expos. 2.* There is no Christian so poore, weake, or unworthy in his owne eyes, but hee is allowed to call God Father, *Ier. 3, 19.*

*Q. What are you to consider in the Lords Prayer it selfe?*

An. *Sixe Petitions, and a thanksgiving.*

*Q. Which is the first petition?*

A. *Hallowed<sup>3</sup> be thy<sup>4</sup> Name.*

*Expos. 3.* To hallow, is not here of unholly or prophane to make holy, *1 Cor. 6. 10. 11.* But to set apart to an holy use, *Exod, 20. 8.* or rather to acknowledge, confesse, and professe holily the Name of

of God, Matth. 11. 19. Levit. 10. 3. 1 Pet. 3. 15.

4. By Name, is meant God himselfe, Psal. 20. 7. and 115. 1. his titles, Exod. 3. 14. 15. Psal. 83. 18. properties, Exod. 34. 5. 6. 7. ordinances, psal. 138. 2. and 1 Tim. 6. 1. and works, psal. 19. 1. judgements; psal. 9. 16. El. 30. 27. mercies, Esay 48. 9. 10. 11. Ezek. 28. 26. or any thing where- by hee makes himselfe knowne, Exodus 20. 7.

*Q. What desire you of God in this pe-  
tition?*

*An. That Gods infinite excellencie  
may be magnified by us on earth, <sup>5</sup> in  
heart, <sup>6</sup> in word, and in <sup>7</sup> doe. g psal. 40.  
16. and 115. 1.*

*Expos. 5. By an inward and faithfull  
acknowledgement, with confidence,  
care, love, hope, humilitie, patience,  
joy, and desire of his presence in heaven.  
Esay 8. 13. 1 pet. 3. 15. Rom. 4. 20. phil. 1.  
20, 21, 22, 23.*

6. By speaking good of Gods name to  
others, psal. 34. 3. Deut. 32. 3. psal. 105. 1. 3.  
and 145. 21.

7. By walking in holinesse and righ-  
tousnesse before God, Mat. 5. 16. Ioh. 15.

8. 1 Pet. 2. 32. patiently submitting our selves unto his will, Iosh. 7. 19. constantly and undantedly professing his truth, Psal. 119. 46. Ioh. 21. 19. and reforming our lives, if wee have gone astray, Ier. 13. 16. Mal. 2. 2.

*Q Which is the second petition ?*

*A. Thy<sup>s</sup> kingdome<sup>s</sup> come.*

*Expof.* 8. Sathan hath his kingdome on earth, 2 Cor. 4. 4. Luke 11. 18. all men by nature being his bondslaves, Ephe. 2. 2. 2 Tim. 2. 26. living in ignorance, error, impiety, and disobedience, Eph. 4. 18. and Christ hath his kingdome, Col. 1. 13. to wit, his Church, which is the company of mankind, 1 Pet. 2. 9. Eph. 5. 23. in heaven and earth, Ephes. 3. 15. Col. 1. 20. called from the world, Rom. 8. 30. unto salvation through him, Act. 4. 12. In this world it is redeemed, called, sanctified. 1 Cor. 1. 30. after this life it is glorified, Math. 25. 34. 2 Theff. 1. 10.

9. The government which Christ exerciseth over all men, and all other creatures, Ephes. 1. 21, 22. Heb. 1. 6, 7. is not here meant; but the speciall government, which hee exerciseth over his Church, Eph. 5. 23. in this life, and the life to come,

*Q. What*

with an Exposition upon the same. 119

*Q* What doe you desire of God in this petition?

*An.* That <sup>io</sup> Christ would b con-  
bert such as be under the power of Sa-  
than, i rule in the hearts of his chosen  
by his spirit here, and k perfect their sal-  
vation in heaven hereafter, b Cant. 8. 8.  
Act. 7. 60. i Eph. 3. 16, 17. k Phil. 1. 8, 9,  
10, 11, 12.

*Expos.* 10. Particularly wee desire that  
God would send forth his Word, Math.  
9. 38. give it free passage, Ephes. 6. 19.  
Rom. 15. 30, 31, 32. powerfully accompa-  
nie it by his spirit, Deut. 33. 8. 10. 2 Cor.  
10. 4, 5, to bring his chosen from the  
power of Satan to God, Act. 26. 18. up-  
hold such as be converted, Psalm. 51. 12.  
Ioh. 17. 15. strengthen the weak, Cant. 1.  
4. Luke 22. 31, 32. 2 Cor. 12. 8, 9, com-  
fort the afflicted, Psal. 51. 12, Cant. 1. 1.  
recall the wandring, Psal. 119. 27. Luke  
19. 10. and to make all grow in grace  
and knowledge, 2 Pet. 3. 18. Luke 17. 5.  
and therefore that the same word may  
be continued, Gal. 2. 5. the Sacraments  
and discipline purely administred, 1 Cor.  
11. 23, 24, &c. 1 Cor. 5. 3, 4, 5. Heb. 3.  
2, 3, 4, 5, 6. Heb. 8. 5. good Ministers

and Magistrates preserved, Deut. 33. 11.  
2 Theff. 3. 1, 2. Psal. 20 1. prospered, Psal.  
122. 6, 7, 8. 1 Tim. 2. 2. and increased. Luk.  
10. 2. El. 49. 23. catechizing more used,  
1 Cor. 3. 2. schooles for piety erected, and  
maintained, 2 King. 6, 1, 2, &c. Elay 62. 7.  
finally that Christ would come to judge-  
ment, Rev. 22. 20.

*Q. Which is the third petition?*

*An. Thy<sup>11</sup> will<sup>12</sup> be<sup>13</sup> done in earth,  
as it is in<sup>14</sup> heaven.*

*Expos. 11.* Man by nature doth the  
will of the flesh, and Satan, Eph. 2. 3. Ioh.  
8. 44. but hee ought to desire and doe, not  
his owne will, Rom. 8. 6. Math. 26. 39.  
but the will of God. El. 26. 8. Psal. 119  
5. 106.

12. The word of God revealed in the  
old & new Testament, is the will of God.

13. To doe Gods will, is to obey it:  
Exod. 24. 7.

14. In Heaven the Saints departed,  
and the Angels obey the Lord; Heb. 12.  
23. Psalm. 103. 20. on earth men living  
are to be obedient, Exod. 24. 3. 1 Sam.  
15. 22.

*Q. What desire you of God in this pe-  
tition?*

*An.*

An. That / whatsoever God willet in his word, might be obeyed *m* chearefully, *n* speedily, *o* faithfully, and constantly, by men on earth, as *p* Angels <sup>15</sup> doe in heaben, / Exod. 19. 8. Rom. 12. 2, *m* psal. 27. 8. and 4. 8. *n* psal. 119. 32. 60. *o* Rev. 2. 10. *p* El. 6. 2.

*Expos. 15.* Wee particularly crave of God the knowledge of his will, psalme 119. 18. 33. 34. Col. 1, 9, 10, suppression of our own vile wills, Rom. 7. 24, faith in Gods promises, Ro. 1, 9, 12, constancy and chearefulnesse in our sufferings, Col. 1, 9, 11, an inward desire, care, and delight, psalm. 119, 36, 143, 145, an endeavour, and ability to walk in holinesse, psal. 119. 112, 167, 168, phil 4. 13, In this life perfectly wee cannot doe the will of God. 2 Sam. 12. 9, and 13. 39, and 24, 10, 2 Chr. 35. 22, Luk. 1, 6, 20, as the Angels doe: But wee must desire, strive after, and hope for perfection, Luke 13, 24, phil. 1, 6, obeying with sincerity, Gen: 5, 24, and 17, 1, Mich. 6, 8, as the Angels doe, though not in the same degree, 1 Cor. 13, 9, 10.

*Q. Which is the fourth petition?*

An. <sup>16</sup> Give us this <sup>17</sup> day <sup>18</sup> our <sup>19</sup> day-

ly <sup>20</sup> bread.

*Expos.* 16. All both poore and rich must pray, Give us; because we have nothing but Gods free gifts; 1 Cor. 4. 7. 1am. 1. 17. have title to nothing, but in Christ Iesus, Heb. 1. 2. with Rom. 8. 32. can keepe nothing but by the Lords licence, Iob 1. 12. neither can any thing prosper with us, but by his blessing, Deut. 8. 16. Pro. 10. 22. Psal. 127. 1 12. Hag 1. 6. Esa. 3.

17. Wee may provide for the time to come in a lawfull manner, when God gives opportunity, Eph. 4. 28. Gen. 41. 34. 35, &c. and 50. 20. 2 Cor. 12. 14. Act. 11. 28. But yet we must ever wait upon Gods providence, 1 Pet. 5. 7. Psal. 55. 22. both when wee have the meanes, Prov. 3. 5, 6. and when we want them, Esa. 28. 16. casting off distrust, excessive distracting, unprofitable, and needlesse cares, Matth. 6. 25, &c. to the end.

18. Bread is said to be Ours, when it is gotten by just and lawfull meanes, Ephe. 4. 28. in a good and honest calling, Gen. 3. 19. our persons being accepted of God in Iesus Christ, 1 Cor. 3. 22, 23. for that which wee so possesse, is given

us

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 12;  
is of God in love and mercy.

19. By dayly bread is meant bread for the supply of our present necessitie, or rather that which is fit for us, or agreeable to our present condition, Prov. 30.8,9.

20. By bread is not meant the bread of life, which is Christ, Ioh. 6.48. but all outward things, Prov. 27.27. Ier. 11.19. Pro. 39. 14. for our necessity, and Christian delight, Psal. 104. 15. Ioh. 12. 3.

*Q. What desire you of God in this petition?*

An. That <sup>21</sup> God would bestow on us, all things necessary for this life, as food, maintenance, &c.

*Expof. 21.* Here we pray for food, and rayment, Gen. 28.20. sleepe, Ps. 3.5. and 4. 8. fitting delights, Psal. 23.5. Pro. 5 13, 19. Gen. 21. 8. and 29, 22, and for contentation with our estates, Heb. 13. 5. 1 Tim. 6. 6. though they be meane, Phil. 4. 12. 1 Tim. 6. 8. resting on Gods providence, Prov. 16. 3. love of justice, Iob 29. 14. faithfulness and painfulness in our callings, 2 Thes. 3. 12. joy and thankfulness, Deut. 28. 47. and 8. 10. 11. and Gods blessing upon them, Gen. 24. 12. Psal. 67. 1, 6, 7. and the sanctification of whatsoever

ver wee enjoy, 1 Tim. 4. 4. as also for peace, Psal. 122. 7, 8, protection by the Magistrate, 1 Tim. 2, 1, 2, seasonable weather, &c. 1 King. 8, 35, 36, Hosh. 2, 21. Deut. 28. 12. valiant souldiers. 2 Sam. 13. 8, 9, 10, to 39, learned and good Physicians. Col. 4. 14. and wee pray against covetousnes, Pla. 119. 36, distracting cares, Mat. 6. 34. distrust, Psal. 78. 22, discontent with our estate, 1 Tim. 6. 10. idlenesse, Math. 20, 3. 6. oppression, injustice, carelesnesse, unjust warre, or whatsoever doth unlawfully hurt and impeach our outward prosperitie.

*Q. Which is the fift petition?*

*An.* And <sup>22</sup> forgive us our <sup>23</sup> trespasses as we <sup>24</sup> forgive them <sup>25</sup> that trespass against us.

*Expof* 22. To forgive sinne is to cover it, put it away out of sight, and not to impute it, or call to a reckoning for it. Psal. 32. 1. 2.

23. Sinnes are called trespasses or debts. Matth. 8. 25. because wee are bound to make satisfaction for them, by suffering the just judgement of God, Luke. 11. 4. Gen. 2. 17. if the divine justice be not satisfied by another. Col. 1. 20.

24. Our

24. Our forgiving others is not a cause why God forgives us, Math. 18. 33. 33. Col. 3. 13. 1 Ioh. 4. 10. 11 but a signe whereby wee are assured that God hath pardoned us, Math. 6. 14. 15. and 5. 23. 24. Mat. 7. 11.

25. The wrong that is done unto us (though not alwaies the damage, 2 Chro. 19. 6. 1 Tim. 5. 8. Eph. 5. 29. Exod. 22. 1. 15. Act. 16. 37. comp. wee ought to forgive, Mark. 11. 25. but the sinne being the breach of the divine law, God onely can pardon. psal. 51. 1. 4.

*Q. What desire you of God in this petition?*

A. That <sup>16</sup> God of his free a mercy in Jesus Christ, would fully <sup>b</sup> pardon all our sins, as <sup>c</sup> we doe pardon the wrongs and iniuries wee receive from others. <sup>a</sup> Esa. 43. 25. <sup>b</sup> psal. 51. 2. <sup>c</sup> Luk. 11. 4.

*Expos.* 26. In this petition we acknowledge our selves to be miserable sinners, psal. 40. 12. psal. 25. 11. Ezr. 9. 6. and that wee have no power to satisfie for sinne, psal. 49. 7. 8. Act. 2. 37. 38. Ezec. 16. 4. 5. and that God is patient, bearing with us so long. Lam. 3. 22. psal. 145. 8. psal. 86. 5. 15. and 103. 8. and mercifull, not giving leave onely, Dan. 9. 18. 19. 2 Chro.

7. 14. but commanding also to pray for pardon, Hosh. 14. 1, 2. whereby hee gives hope of forgiveness: and hence wee are drawn to flee to the throne of grace, Psal. 86. 15. 16. Joel 2. 12, 13. for the full forgiveness both of guilt & punishment, Psal. 51. 1, 2. Every day we sin, Eccl. 7. 21. Job 14. 4. and therefore every day wee must pray for pardon, Psal. 55. 17. and our faith is weake, Luke 24. 21, 22, 23. Rom. 14. 1. wee must pray daily, that wee may have greater assurance of our salvation, Luke 17. 5. 2 Sam. 12. 13. with Psal. 51. 1, 2.

*Q. Which is the sixth petition?*

*A. And <sup>27</sup> lead us not into temptation, but deliver <sup>28</sup> us from evill.*

*Expos. 27.* Forgiveness of sinnes, and grievous temptations are inseparable companions, Luke 21. 22, 23, 24, 25, 26. Act. 9. 17, 23, 24. Temptation is any triall, whereby the heart is inticed to sinne by Sathan, the world, or the flesh, 1 Thes. 3. 5. Jam. 1. 14. Math. 26. 41. God is said to tempt his servants, to try and humble them, by offering occasions of sinne, sending afflictions, and deferring to helpe; Deut. 13. 3. Deut. 8. 2. Gen. 22. 1. Psal. 10. 1. But this in respect of God is ever good,  
Matth.

Matth. 19. 17. Hab. 1. 13. Iam. 1. 13. Satan, the world, and the flesh are said to tempt, by inticing alwayes unto sinne, Satan by inward suggestions, 1 Chron. 21. 1. Iohn 13. 2. and outward objects, 2 Sam. 11. 2, 3. Math. 4. 3, 4, 8. The world by bad examples, Ier. 44. 17. or wicked perswasions; alluring or terrifying, Gen. 3. 6. and 39. 7. and Iob 2. 9. 1 King. 13. 8. Math. 16. 23. Act. 21. 12. The flesh tempteth, when wee are inticed of our owne corruption, Obad. 3. Iam. 1. 14. 1 Pet. 2. 11. Temptation hath these degrees; suggestion, delight, consent, and practise, Iam. 1. 14. To be led into temptation, is to be overcome of temptation; so that Satan doth prevaile against us, and get the victory, Math. 26. 41. 1 Chron. 21. 1. God is said to lead into temptation, when in any tryall hee doth forsake man, doth withhold or withdraw from him his grace, suffer him to fall, 2 Chron. 32. 31. harden his heart, Exod. 7. 3. and give him wholly up into Satans power, and the full sway of his owne corrupt heart, Rom. 1. 24, 26, 28.

28. To deliver is either to support under, or else to protect and defend from  
evill

evill, 2 Cor. 12.9. By evill the power and poyson of sinne, Sathan, and the world is understood, Math. 5.37.

*Q. What desire you of God in this petition?*

*A.* To be freed from <sup>19</sup> trials themselves, so far *d* as it wil stand with Gods good pleasure, and alwaies from the evill thereof, *e* that we faint not under them, <sup>20</sup> be foyled by them, *d* Mat. 26. 39. *e* Rom. 8.28. 1 Cor. 10.13.

*Expos.* 29. Here wee acknowledging the Lords power over our enemies that tempt us, Zach. 3.2. Iude 9. and our owne frailty, Psal. 103. 14. 15. withall bewayling our pronenesse to evill and corruption, Rom. 7. 24. 18. wee desire God to bridle Sathan, 2 Cor. 12.7.8. kill sinne, Psalme 19. 13. support us by his grace, Ephes. 3. 16. 1 Thes. 3. 13. stirre us up to be watchfull in prayer, Ephes. 6. 18. give us hope, patience, consolation, Col. 1. 11. 2 Thess. 2. 17. and a good issue out of all tryals, Psal. 6.4. that wee neither presume, nor despaire, Prov. 30.9. and free us from misery, so farre as may stand with his good pleasure.

*Q. Which is the Thanksgiving in the*

the Lords Prayer?

A. For thine is the 3<sup>o</sup> kingdome, the  
1<sup>st</sup> power, and the 3<sup>rd</sup> glory, for ever and  
ever.

Expos. 30. God is the right owner,  
and supream and absolute ruler over all  
things in heaven and earth, Gen. 14. 19.  
1 Chro. 29. 11. Psal. 24. 1, 2, all blessings  
therefore are to be craved at his hands,  
Psal. 145, 14, 15, 16, for whither should  
subjects flee, but to their King? Psal. 70.  
5. Psal. 2. 9, 10, 11, 12.

31. God can give whatsoever we stand  
in need of, Matth. 7, 7, and 8. 2, streng-  
then us against any sinne, 2 Tim. 4. 18.  
Iude. 24. and unto any duty. Heb. 13. 21.  
and wee have no strength but from him,  
1 Chro. 29. 15. 16. 2 Cor 3. 5. therefore  
we must call upon him alone.

32. God ought to be glorified by us in  
all things, Col. 3. 17. gaineth glory by hea-  
ring the prayers of his people, Psa. 79. 11.  
Ps. 50. 15, and 30. 11, 12, and for his glo-  
ry will not deny them any thing that shall  
be good. Math. 7, 11, Luke 11, 13.

Q. Doe not these words containe a rea-  
son also, why wee beg the former blessings  
at the hands of God?

An. Yes, for seeing the kingdome, power, and glory are the Lords, wee should call upon him in all our necessities. 1 Chro. 29. 11. 13.

Q. *Whick is the Conclusion of the Lords Prayer?*

A. Amen, which is a witnessing of our faith, and desire of the things prayed for, Ier. 11. 5.

Q. *What doth Amen 33 signifie?*

A. So it is, or, so be it, 1 King. 1. 36. Ier. 28. 6. and 1. 15.

*Expos. 33. Amen,* is sometimes a title of Christ, Rev. 3. 14. because of his faithfulness and truth in performing all promises, 2 Cor. 1. 20. In the beginning of sentences, it is an earnest asseveration, Ioh. 6. 26. Math. 24. 47. Luk. 12. 44. But when it is added in the end of blessings, prayers, or imprecations, it implyeth both a desire of the things so to be, and confidence that so it shall be, Numb. 5. 22. Deut. 27. 15. 1 Cor. 14. 16. Christ teaching us to end our prayers with *Amen*, doth thereby admonish us, both to desire grace of God, and to beleve that God presently heareth, and will certainly in due time grant our requests; 1. Cor.

14. 16. so that coldnesse, doubting, distrust are to be striven against, 1 Tim. 2. 8. James 1. 6.

*Q. What must wee doe after wee have prayed?*

*An. Observe how wee speed, and what answer we receive, f Psal. 3. 4. and 85. 8.*

*Expos. 34.* Here wee must know, that God doth heare and grant our requests, when yet hee doth deferre to give us the sense thereof, Esay 64. 24. 2 Sam. 12. 13. with Psal. 51. 1, 2. Dan. 9. 22, 23. and 10. 12, 13. Also hee doth not alway give the particular thing wee aske, but what hee knowes best for us, Rom. 1. 10. 2 Cor. 12. 7, 8, 9, Heb. 5. 7. Further we must take heed that wee limit not the Lord to our owne time, Esay 28. 16. nor yet receive Sathans answer for the Lords: Sathans answer is either contrary to the word of truth; or if hee speake the truth, it is to a wrong end, viz. despaire, or prophane-nesse. Lastly, observe that we speed well, when God giveth us the same thing that wee crave, being good, Lam. 3. 57. Gen. 30. 19, 22, and 20, 17. Psal. 21. 2. 4. Exod. 17. 11. Iosh. 10. 13. or another as fit, or  
more

more fit for us, Gen. 17. 18, 19. Mark. 14. 35. with Heb. 5. 7. or more patience and strength to wayt, 2 Cor. 12. 7, 8, 9. Psal. 40, 1.

*Q* What benefit shall we gaine hereby?

*An.* It will stirre up the <sup>35</sup> heart to *g* thankfulness, remembre *b* <sup>36</sup> dulnesse and <sup>37</sup> negligence, strengthen <sup>38</sup> our *i* faith, and inflame <sup>39</sup> our hearts with *k* zeale, ioy, and love, *g* Psal. 31. 21. 22. *b* Psal. 88. 13. and 4. 1. 2. *i* Psal. 4. 3. Psal. 116. 1. Psal. 28. 6, 7.

*Expos.* 35. The hearing of our holy prayers is a pledge of Gods love, and a sweet and comfortable testimony of his mercie, Psalm. 31. 21. 22. provoking the heart cheerefully to praise, Psal. 30. 8. 10, 11, 12.

36. When God answereth our prayers, the light of his countenance shined upon us, and this reviveth the dull spirits, Psal. 116. 6. 7. 9. 2 Sam. 7. 27.

37. Experience of good received from God, and begged in prayer, doth quicken us thereunto, Psalme 68. 6. 7. and 116. 1, 2.

38. God is unchangeable, so that former mercies given, doe assure us of future

ture blessing, Psalm 61. 5, 6.

39. Though our hearts are cold by nature, yet the sight of Gods love doth move us effectually to love the Lord againe, Psa. 145. 18, 19, 20, 21.

Q. What must we doe if God answer us not the first or second time?

An. Examine <sup>40</sup> how wee pray, and continue <sup>41</sup> fervent therein, waiting upon the Lord untill we speake, 1 Jam. 5. 3. Luk. 18. 1. Hab. 2. 3. Psa. 5. 3.

Expof. 40. Sometimes wee aske and receive not because wee aske amisse; ignorantly, rashly, coldly, with wearinesse, distrustfully, and without love, Job 27. 9. Proverbs 21. 13. asking either things not good, Math. 20. 21, 22. Luke 9. 54. 55. or not fit for them for whom wee pray; or to a wrong end. But here observe, that they pray well that take notice of their wants in Prayers: Psalm 31. 22. and sometimes the childe of God prayeth best when hee knoweth not that hee prayeth at all, Rom. 8. 26. Also God sometimes giveth us what wee pray for, when wee pray but coldly, Mark. 9. 22. 24, 25. that hee might encourage us to pray; and denies us sometimes when wee pray fervently

vently, that wee might not trust to our prayers, Psal. 22. 2.

41. God for a time may deny what wee ask, Psal. 6. 3. and 13. 1. that hee may exercise our humility in regard of our wants, Lam. 2. 44. Iud. 10. 13, 14. our faith and patience in waiting, Matth. 15. 22, 23, 24, 26, 27, 28. and try our obedience, whether wee will in conscience obey, though wee want the comfort promised, Psal. 44. 17, 18, 19. 26. Moreover, hee deferreth to help for a reason, to quicken us to prayer, make us know our selves, carefully preserve his graces when once wee have them, and doe us good in the later end, Iud. 20. 26. wee should not then be faint-hearted, but hold out unto the end, being supported with faith, hope, and love, Psal. 40. 1. and 37. 7.

*Q. Who ought to pray?*

*An.* Though God require it of all men upon earth, yet it moze specially belongeth to the members of *p* the Church militant, *o* Matth. 7. 7, 8. Psal. 14. 2. *p* Ioh 16. 23. 26.

*Q. Who can or may pray with hope to speed?*

*An.* Only they *q* that <sup>14</sup> depart from iniqui

niquity, 9 Psalm. 66. 18.

*Expos.* 42. Such only as feele the bur-  
den of sinne, and have a desire to be ea-  
sed, are called to come unto Christ; and  
have a promise to finde good successe, Es.  
35. 1. Matthew 11. 28. Others doe but  
knock God; Psal. 78. 34, 35, 36. neither  
can they pray with the graces required  
as faith, reverence, fervencie, love, &c.  
so long as they love wickednesse, Zach.  
2. 10. 2 Timothie 2. 19. Prayer is not a  
work of nature, but of the spirit of san-  
ctification; Rom. 8. 15. 26. Gal. 4. 4, 5.  
and he cannot fulfill the lusts of the flesh,  
that hath the spirit of grace dwelling in  
him, Gal. 5. 16. so that the prayers of the  
wicked are an abomination to the Lord,  
Proverbs 15. 8. Ioh. 9. 31. Esay 58. 7, 8, 9.  
Ezek. 17. 18. Our departing from sinne  
is at the first very rude and imperfect, Ioh.  
21. 15. 1 Pet. 2. 1: wee must pray daily to  
be renewed, Col. 1. 9. Phil. 1. 9, 10, 11,  
1 Thes. 3. 13.

*Q.* For whom must we pray?

*A.* For <sup>43</sup> all sorts of men now living,  
<sup>44</sup> that shall live hereafter, but not  
for the dead, 1 Tim. 2. 1. Ioh. 17. 20.  
Luk. 16. 24, 25.

*Expos.* 43. The Commandement of God, James 5. 16. Ephes. 6. 18. Col. 4. 3. Romans 15. 30. our love to our Brother, who is of our flesh, and may appertain to the Kingdome of grace, Rom. 10. 1. 2 Ioh. 5. 16. doth require that we pray for all sorts of men living, both private, 1 am. 5. 14. 1 Sam. 12. 25. and publick persons, 1 Kings 1. 36, 37. Esa. 6. 10. friend, Iob 42. 8. 10. and foe, Psalm. 35. 13. neere in bloud, Num. 12, 13. Gen. 25. 21. and 17. 18. and 27, 28. and 28. 3. 1 Chro. 29. 19. and stranger. Col. 1. 9. weake or strong Christians, 1 Thes. 5. 14. Col. 4. 12. 2 Cor. 1. 11. Hebrews 13. 18, 19. such as stand, 2 Thes. 3. 5. or be gone astray, Cant. 8. 8. Exod. 32. 31, 32. Rom. 10. 1. All need the prayers one of another, James 5. 16. Sathan seekes to molest and trouble all men, Luke 22. 31. Iob 1. 9. 10. Eph. 6. 12. 1 Pet. 5. 8. the fall of any man is a dishonour to God. Romans 2. 23, 24. a sinners conversion brings glory to his Name, Apoc. 16. 9. Mal. 2. 1, 2. the prayer of the weakest Christian is availeable with God, Psalme 65. 2. and 145. 18. Psalm. 102. 17. at least it shall returne into his owne bosome, Psalme 53. 13. Ezek. 14. 14. it is a  
speciall

Speciall act of love, Matth. 5. 44. a meane  
to reconcile our enemies unto us, Rom.  
12. 20. or to prevent danger or hurt, that  
otherwise wee might receive from him.  
Psal. 109 4.

44. Prayers cannot availe the dead,  
Rev. 14. 13. 1 Pet. 3. 19. Heb. 9. 27. neither  
can a Prayer for them be a work of faith:  
nor commandement to doe it, promise of  
good to come by it, or approved example  
to warrant it in Scripture, there is not  
any; Superstition did first hatch these  
prayers, and superstition now is the foun-  
dation of them. Love is the pretence  
which the ignorant sort make to defend  
them, but indeed they are vaine, ignorant,  
ash, and uncharitable.

*Q. May men content themselves to pray  
private only, or only in publick.*

*An. No, but<sup>45</sup> they must use both  
publick and private<sup>46</sup> prayer, Acts 2.  
Luke 11. 1.*

*Expos.<sup>45</sup> Publick prayer is that  
which is used in the publick meetings  
and assemblies of Gods servants. This  
is a principall part of Gods worshippe,  
Acts 3. 1. acceptable unto his Majestie,  
because we acknowledge him openly to be*

the giver of every good gift, and speak of his free favour, to the praise of his grace, Psalm. 22. 25. and 40. 10. ever used in the house of God, Matthew 21. 12. sanctifying every other duty, 1 Tim. 4. 5. commanded by Christ, who hath promised his presence in a speciall manner in the congregation, Psalm. 27. 4. Matthew 18. 20. Also hereby we are quickned to pray more fervently, Zacharie 8. 20, 21, 22. do testifie our faith, hope, thankfulness, professe our selves to be the servants of Christ, and stirre up others by our example. Psalme 95. 6. and 96. 1. 2, 7, 8. And it is much to our comfort, that what wee aske, is approved and sought with common consent; publique service being of more worth than private, as a societie exceedeth the worthinesse of one man. Psal. 29. 9. and 87. 2. and 35. 18. and

**III. I.**

46 Private prayer is that which is performed in a family, or by one alone, Zach. 12. 12, 13, 14. in the family prayer is necessary, God by his commandment binding Parents and Masters to see it performed. Iosh. 24. 15. Gen. 18. 18. the faithfull have followed the Lords direction

rection herein, Job 1. 5. hereby the affaires of the whole family are sanctified, 1 Chro. 16. 43. Psal. 127. 1. 1 Tim. 4. 5. and God will poure downe a blessing upon that family, that joyntly seeketh his favour by hearty supplication, Act. 1. 14, 15. and 12. 5, 6. Alone wee must pray, Genes. 24. 63. and 32. 9. 10. Luke 11. 1. Matth. 6. 6. that wee may be more fit to joyne with others to our edification, and have comfort when wee are alone. Psal. 30. 10, 11, 12. Also wee have private sins to confesse, wants to bewaile, crosses under which wee should bee humbled, Psalm. 6. 2. 3. 6. 7. Matth. 14. 31. and favours for which wee should be thankful. Lam. 3. 23. Psalm. 71. 23, 24. and 66. 19, 20.

*Q. What other meanes hath the Lord appointed to increase faith?*

*Ans.* The due administration, and receiving of the Sacraments, x Gen. 17. 9, 10, 11. Rom. 4. 11.

*Expos.* 1. The word Sacrament did in ancient times signifie an oath, whereby souldiers bound themselves to be true to their Captaine, and the Generall in like manner did binde himselfe to the

souldiers; but now it is used to signify the scales of the covenant, whereby the Lord doth binde himselfe in Christ Iesus to be mercifull to us, and wee binde ourselves to be true unto Christ. The Sacraments are speciall meanes to confirme faith, because Christ is after a speciall manner represented and offered unto a worthy Communicant, and effectually bestowed upon every worthy Communicant.

*Q. Who ought to administer the Sacraments?*

*An. Only they that y are<sup>2</sup> lawfully called thereunto by the Church, y He*  
5.4.

*Expos. 2.* Such are lawfully called to administer the Sacraments, who being furnished with gifts of knowledge, and holinesse, are set a part for that office by the Church, Deut. 33. 10. Mal. 2. 1. Matth. 5. 14, 15, 16. 1 Tim. 3. 2, 4, 5, 6, Tit. 1. 7, 8, 9. Matth. 24. 45. Rom. 1. Tit. 1. 5.

*Q. What is a Sacrament?*

*An. A<sup>3</sup> seale of y the covenant of grace, y Rom. 4. 11.*

*Expos. 3.* Sacraments are appointed not only to help the understanding, and

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 141

the memory, but also to perswade, and assure the heart that Christ is ours.

4. That covenant is sealed in the Sacrament, which God of his meere grace, and favour, made with us in Iesus Christ, being miserable sinners, Genesis 17. 7. 9, 10, 11, &c.

*Q. In what words is this covenant expressed in Scripture?*

*An.* I will be <sup>s</sup> thy <sup>z</sup> God, and thou shalt be my people, <sup>z</sup> Ier. 31. 33.

*Expos.* 5. In this covenant God doth promise to be our Saviour, King, and Father; to pardon our sinne, sanctifie our nature, bestow all good things upon us, and protect us from all evill, Gen. 17. 1, 2. Lev. 26. 11. 12. 2 Cor. 6. 16, 17, 18. Heb. 8. 10, 11, 12. we promise to chuse God to be our God, trust in him, love, and feare him, and walk in obedience before him, Exod. 15. 2. and 20. 19. and 24. 3. 7.

*Q. What are the parts of a Sacrament?*

*A.* Two. an <sup>o</sup> outward visible signe, sanctified to <sup>r</sup> represent and seale another thing to the minde and heart; and an inward <sup>g</sup> grace, which is the thing signified.

*Expos.*

*Expos. 6.* Of a signe there must needs be two parts, the understanding thereby conceiving one thing, and the sense another, Gen. 9. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17. Esa. 38. 7, 8. therefore of a Sacrament there must needs be two parts, one inward, another outward.

7. A signe sanctified, is that which is appointed by the Lord himselfe to signifie, Exod. 40. 11. 13. and not by man upon any conceited analogie or proportion.

8. The inward grace, is the free and spirituall gift which God bestoweth upon the soule, Genes. 17. 7. Matthew 26. 28.

*Q. Who is the Author of the Sacraments?*

*An.* The Lord a only, who made the covenant. a Esa. 7. 14, and 38. 7.

*Expos. 9.* God is the only Law-giver of his Church, Iam. 4. 12. Matth. 23. 8. 10. Act. 3. 22. to teach it by word and signe. And as to forgive sinnes, and receive unto grace is proper to the Lord alone. Mic. 7. 18. Hos. 14. 1, 2. so it is his peculiar to institute a signe and scale for the confirmation thereof.

*Q. How*

**Q.** How many Sacraments be there?

**An.** In the <sup>10</sup> New Testament only two: *b* Baptisme, and the Lords *c* Supper, *b* Ioh. 1. 26. *c* Luk. 22: 19, 20.

*Expos.* 10. In the old Testament the Jewes had many Sacraments, some ordinary, Gen. 17. 9. 11, 12, &c. Exod. 12. 1, 2, 3, &c. some extraordinary, 1 Cor. 10. 1, 2, 3, 5, but the New Testament hath onely two. For there be no more Sacraments of the New Testament, than Christ did institute, and receive before his death, because it was necessary, that hee should receive both, to sanctifie them in his owne person, and to seale that communion which is betweene him and us. The nature of a Sacrament agreeth not to the five forged Sacraments of the Papists; either they are not proper to the Church, or are not instituted of God, or consist not of an outward visible signe, and inward grace: the covenant of grace is not sealed in any of them. These Sacraments of the New Testament are perpetuall, and never to bee abrogated, Heb. 8. 13.

**Q** What is Baptisme?

**A.** A <sup>12</sup> Sacrament *c* of our ingrafting  
into

into Christ, communion with him, and entrance into the Church, *c* Math. 28. 19. Acts 8. 31.

*Expos.* 12. The seed of Abraham, Gal. 3. 7. or children of Christian Parents are within the covenant, are Christians, and members of the Church, 1 Cor. 7. 14. Rom. 11. 16. Baptisme therefore doth not make them Christian soules; but doth solemnly signifie, and seale their ingrafting into Christ, and that communion which the members of Christ have with him their Head, and doth confirme that they are acknowledged members of the Church, and entered into it. 1 Pet. 3. 21.

*Q.* What is the outward signe?

*An.* Water, *f* wherewith the party baptized is *g* washed, by dipping or sprinkling, *h* into the <sup>12</sup> Name of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, *f* Acts 10. 47. *g* Math. 3. 6. 11. 13. 16. Acts 16. 15. *h* Matth. 28. 19.

*Expos.* 12. To be baptized into the Name of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, is to be consecrated unto the worship and service of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost.

*Q.* What

Q. What is the inward grace or thing signified?

An. Forgiveness of <sup>13</sup> sinnes, and  
k<sup>1</sup> sanctification. i Mark 1. 4. Acts 2. 38.  
k<sup>2</sup> Tit. 3. 5.

Expos. 13. Water in Baptisme doth signify both Christs Bloud, by which all our sinnes are washed away, and Christs Spirit, by which wee are regenerated, Rom. 6. 3. Matth. 3. 11. Iohn 1. 26. Col. 2. 12. Wherefore the inward grace in Baptisme, is the pardon of our sinnes, and renewing of our nature, Tit. 3. 5.

Q. To what condition doth the party baptized bind himselfe?

An. To beleeve in <sup>14</sup> Christ, and e to forsake his sins, d Act. 8. 37. e Mat. 3. 12.

Expos. 14. Gods promise to us, and our promise to God, implied in the covenant, is sealed in Baptisme, Acts 16. 14, 15. 31, 32, 33. so that wee bind our selves thereby to the performance of our duty. Infants baptized have not the use of reason, much lesse faith to beleeve; but yet as they be in the covenant, so they oblige themselves to beleeve in Christ, and depart from iniquitie; which they are bound to performe, when they come  
to

to yeeres of discretion, Acts 2. 39. with  
2 Cor. 6. 17, 18.

*Q. How oft ought a man to be baptized?*

*An.* It is enough <sup>15</sup> once to be baptiz-  
ed: for baptisme is a pledge of our g new  
birth, *f* Act. 7. 8. *g* Tit. 3. 5.

*Expos.* 15. Wee never read that Christ  
or his Apostles did administer Baptisme  
more than once to one man. And Cir-  
cumcision, the seale of entrance into the  
Church of the Iewes, in the place where-  
of Baptisme is come, was only once ap-  
plied by Gods appointment, Gen. 17. 23,  
24, &c.

*Q. Who ought to be baptized?*

*A.* Infidels *b* converted to <sup>16</sup> the faith,  
and <sup>17</sup> Infants *i* of one, or both christian  
<sup>18</sup> Parents, *b* Acts 8. 12. *i* Acts 2. 39.  
*i* Cor. 7. 14.

*Expos.* 16. All they who be within the  
covenant, and such only are to be received  
into Baptisme.

17. Infants of Christian Parents are  
within the covenant, to them appertai-  
neth the promise of forgivenessse of sinnes,  
and the Kingdome of God. Also circum-  
cision amongst the Iewes, which answereth  
to our Baptisme, was administred to In-  
fants,

fants, Gen. 17. 12. and 21. 1. 4. Luk. 1. 59. and 2. 21. And when *the faithfull* which the Scripture saith, *were converted with their whole household, and bapised,* it may probably bee thought, there were some children amongst them of those households, who were not excluded, Acts 14. 14, 15.

18. Though we acknowledge such onely to be sincere Christians, who serve God with upright hearts, Rom. 21. 28, 29. yet those are not denied to be Christians, who make so much as a generall profession of Christ, Act. 11. 26. 1 Cor. 1. 2. with 5. 1, 2, 3. and 15. 12.

Q. *What is the Lords Supper?*

A. A Sacrament of our continuance and growth in Christ. 1 Cor. 10. 16.

Expos. 1. Christ is given to be spirituall nourishment unto the Soule, that wee might grow and increase in him, Iohn 6. 33. 48, 50, 51, 52, 54, 56. as plants are not onely grafted, but doe grow in the stock: and this is sealed in this Sacrament.

Q. *Who is the author of this Sacrament?*

An. The Lord / Jesus<sup>s</sup> in the same night

night 3 that he was betrayed, / 1. Coꝛ. 11  
23, 24.

*Expos.* 2. Christ who is the Lord and head of his Church, Act. 10. 36. Eph. 1. 22. Col. 1. 18. having authority to institute Sacraments, Matth. 28. 18, 19. and power effectually to performe whatsoever is signified and sealed therein, Ioh. 1. 4. Eph. 5. 1. 4. did in his owne person institute and ordaine it.

3. When Christ was preparing himselfe to the greatest work of love that ever was, having his thoughts wholly bent to procure the eternall good of his Elect; then did hee out of his infinite love, even in the same night that hee was to be betrayed, appoint this holy Sacrament; knowing that the institution and sealing of the testament, ought to goe before the death of the testator. This should stirre us up with care and reverence to receive this pledge of Christs love, and to come unto it as unto a spirituall feast, being perswaded that Christ will respect us now he is glorified, seeing hee did not forget us in his agony and passion.

*Q. What is the outward signe?*

*An. Bread & wine, with the actions*

*ons*

ons pertaining to them, as breaking,  
giving, receiving, eating, and drinking.  
Mat. 26. 26, 27, 28.

*Expos. 4.* Besides that Bread and  
Wine are most usuall, fit, and necessarie  
nourishment, Psalm. 104. 15. they doe of  
all others best serve to expresse the body  
and bloud of Christ, Ioh. 6. 33. Leavened  
or unleavened bread are of free use, Acts  
20. 7. Matth. 26. 17. 26. but it is expedi-  
ent, that it be bread that hath substance  
in it. The use of the Wafer-cake is justly  
blamed as superstitious, by our Church.  
And because the Sacrament is a spirituall  
feast; therefore the finest bread, and pure  
Wine is of most laudable use. Out of  
niggardlinesse to mix water with wine,  
favoureth of an ill minde, Malac. 1. 7, 8.  
Christ being not only the true, but the  
sufficient nourishment of the soule, in-  
tending to give us a full meale, appointed  
both bread and wine, and that severally  
to be used in the Lords Supper, 1 Cor.  
11. 23, 24. So that it is sacriledge to de-  
liver this Sacrament in one kind only,  
and presumption not to administer them  
severally, seeing Christ intended to set  
forth his violent death, wherein his  
L body

body and blood were separated.

5. The bread is to be broken according to the example of Christ, and his Apostles; because this Sacrament was appointed specially to represent the death and passion of our Saviour Christ, in which his body was crucified, and his blood shed. *Matth. 26. 26, 27, 28. Act. 20. 7.*

*Q. What is the inward grace?*

*An. Christ with all the benefits of his death and passion, 1 Corinth. 11. 24.*

*Expos. 6.* Not only Christ his benefits, but even Christ himselfe is offered unto us; for wee cannot be partakers of the benefits of Christ, unlesse wee be united unto him. *Ioh. 15. 2. Eph. 4. 16. Col. 2. 19.* Christ is truly and spiritually present in the Sacrament, exhibited to the faith of every worthy receiver, but not corporally united to the bread and wine in respect of place, *Acts 3. 21. with Matthew 28. 6. Ioh. 16. 18.*

7. The Bread signifies the body of Christ, the Wine betokeneth his blood; the beaking of the Bread setteth forth the crucifying of Christ, &c.

*Q. What is the duty of the Minister in the*

the administration of the Sacrament?

An. To consecrate<sup>8</sup> it by<sup>9</sup> declaring the institution thereof, & <sup>10</sup> prayer joyned with thanksgiving<sup>11</sup>: as also to break the bread, and afterwards to deliver the bread and wine to the people of God, o 1 Cor. 11. 23, 24. Matth. 26. 26, 27, 28. Mark. 14. 22. Luk. 22. 19.

9. To consecrate, is to set apart the bread & wine unto an holy use. 1 Tim. 4. 5. Exod. 13. 2. and 22. 29.

9. If Christ had not instituted this use of bread and wine, it could never have had the being, efficacy, and vertue of a Sacrament; therefore the institution ought to be declared.

10. God is ever ready prest to bestow a blessing upon his ordinances, Mal. 3. 10. Psal. 81. 13. but yet looketh to be sought unto, Ioh. 4. 10. Act. 6. 2. 4. and 4. 31. therefore the Minister must crave Gods blessing to sanctifie the bread and wine to their right ends.

11. The work of our Redemption being lively set forth in this Sacrament; praise to God for that benefit ought not to be omitted. Rev. 5. 9. Psal. 103. 4. Rev. 1. 5, 6. Zach. 9. 9.

*Q. What is hereby signified?*

*An.* The action of God, the Father, offering Christ to all, and bestowing him p effectually upon the worthy receiver. p 1 Cor. 10. 16.

*Q. What is the duty of the receivers?*

*An.* To receive the <sup>12</sup> bread & wine delivered, and to <sup>13</sup> eat and drink thereof, q Matth. 26. 26, 27. 1 Cor. 11. 23, 24

*Expos.* 12. It is most expedient to receive the bread and cup into the hand, and not superstitiously, or unseemely to have the bread put, or the wine poured into the mouth, Matth. 26. 26. 1 Cor. 14. 40.

13. Eating importeth more than to suffer a thing to melt in the mouth; for common bread fit for nourishment, which should be used, should by chewing, &c. be prepared for the stomach.

*Q. What is signified hereby?*

*A.* Our receiving and feeding upon Christ by faith. r 1 Cor. 10. 16.

*Q. Is it sufficient to receive this Sacrament once?*

*An.* No: but s we must receive it <sup>14</sup> often, s Act. 2. 42. and 20. 7.

*Expos.* 14. Christs commandement, 1 Cor.

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 153

1 Cor. 11. 26. the Apostles practice, Act<sup>s</sup> 20. 7. our owne necessity, weaknesse of faith, 1 Sam. 27. 1. Mark. 16. 14. dulnesse of understanding, Ioh. 20. 9. Mark. 8. 17, 18. forgetfulnesse, Luk. 24. 9. and spirituall wants and decayes in grace, Matth. 24. 12. Rev. 2. 4. and 3. 2. doe require that we receive this Sacrament often. Rev. 3. 2, 3. We must receive it as often as it is administered in that Congregation where wee live, unlesse wee be justly hindered; or companies in great Parishes be sorted for severall dayes, because they cannot communicate all at once, Numb. 9. 13. 2 Chro. 30. 13. Act. 2. 42. Matth. 22. 5, 6. 1 Cor. 10. 16.

*Q. For what end and use ought wee to receive this Sacrament?*

*An.* To confirme our<sup>s</sup> faith, communion with Christ, and all saving graces in us; to keepe<sup>s</sup> in remembrance the Lords death untill hee come againe, and to testifie<sup>w</sup> our love one unto another. 1 Cor. 10. 16. & 1 Cor. 11. 24. 26. & 1 Cor. 12. 13.

*Expos.* 15. The increase of faith, and of communion with Christ, inferre necessarily an increase of all graces, which spring

thence as from the root, Ioh. 15. 4. Eph. 2. 21, 22. Ioh. 7. 37.

16. This firreth up a more serious thinking on Christs love and goodnesse in his death, and so preserves the same more truly in memory. And by eating this bread, and drinking this wine, men doe professe & after a sort preach unto others, unto the worlds end, the mysterie of the Gospel; the summe and substance whereof consisteth in the death of Iesus Christ, and the fruits that flow there-from, shadowed in the Sacrament.

*Q* What is the danger of unworthy receiving?

*A.* Unworthy receivers are guilty of the body and blood of the Lord, and doe eat and drink judgement to themselves, x 1 Cor. 11. 27. 29.

*Expos* 17. Unworthy receivers are such who eat and drink unworthily, that is, who receive the bread and wine without due reverence and respect to the mysterie contained in them, 1 Sam. 6. 19. 2 Sam. 6. 6. 2. h. o. 30. 20. or to the holy ends why they were ordained, or to the person by whose authority they were appointed, 1 Sam. 2. 29. with Rev. 3. 4. Luk. 3. 8.

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 155

18. To be guilty of the body and bloud of the Lord, is to offer a speciall wrong and injurie to the person of Christ, and his sufferings, and in a speciall manner to sinne against the work of our redemption, which is fully set forth in the Lords Supper.

*Q. Who are to receive this Sacrament?*

*An.* Such as know their <sup>1<sup>o</sup></sup> misery by sinne, the remedy thereof in Christ, and <sup>2<sup>o</sup></sup> the doctrine of the Sacrament; with all earnestly & longing <sup>3<sup>o</sup></sup> to be satisfied with the bread of life. *y* Matth. 11. 28. & Exod. 12. 26, 27. Rev. 22. 17.

*Expos.* 19. Christs death is signified by the Sacrament, and Christ with all the benefits of his death and passion is offered herein: unlesse we know Christ, our misery without him, and the exceeding benefits of his death, wee can never desire, Ioh. 4. 10. or rejoyce in thanksgiving for that mercy, Rom. 7. 25. Eph. 2. 1. 4. & 5. 8. 1 Tim. 1. 13, 14.

20. This Sacrament is a signe and seale: therefore before wee can use it well, or prepare to receive, or examine our selves how wee receive, 1 Cor. 11. 28. we

must have understanding, Exod. 12. 26, 27.  
Iosh. 4. 6. 2 Chro. 30. 22.

21. The thirsty, who are ever lowly, are the only welcome guests unto the Lords table. Ioh. 7. 37. Rev. 22. 15. This desire is stirred up in us, by a consideration of the necessity of the Sacrament, our own want thereof, Matth. 9. 12. the benefits bestowed therein, Psal. 63. 1, 2, 3. Prov. 4. 7. and the helps wee have thereby to quicken and confirme our faith.

*Q. What else is required in them that come to this holy Table?*

*An. Renewed*<sup>22</sup> hatred of all *b* sin, an hearty endeavour *c* to overcome naturall passions, and an utter and well advised *d* forsaking of grosse sinne; willingness to *e* be strengthened in<sup>23</sup> faith, & a longing desire for<sup>24</sup> the good of our brethren. *b* Luk. 3. 12, 13. *c* Matth. 18. 3. *d* Luk. 14. 28, 29, &c. *e* Matth. 5. 6. *f* Mark. 11. 25. Matth. 5. 23, 24.

*Expos.* 22. Hee that loves sinne, cannot truly thirst after Christ. Matth. 11. 28. beleeve in God, Mark. 1. 15. Act. 15. 9. & Ioh. 3. 3. 1 Cor. 15. 17. or have communion with him. 2 Cor. 6. 14. Psal. 5. 4. Amos 3. 3. 1 Ioh. 1. 6. Sinne is of a soyl-  
ling

ling nature, and doth defile Gods ordinances unto us. Tit. 1. 15. Hag. 2. 12, 14. Heb. 10. 22. Numb. 9. 6. 2 Chro. 23. 19. It sufficeth not that we hate all sinne, but this must be renewed by labour and care, Matth. 18. 3. Gen. 35. 2. Ainos 4. 12. Luk. 3. 12, 13, 14. to see more throughly the vileneffe and multitude of our particular sinnes, Rev. 3. 2, 3. Ier. 3. 13. purge the heart of them, by judging and condemning. Iam. 4. 8, 9, &c. and quicken the loathing of them in the heart, so that the very thought of them may be bitter. Ier. 31. 19, 2 Tim. 1. 6.

23. We should desire to have our faith encreased before wee come to the Lords Table: for faith was required of such who did desire to be baptized, Act. 8. 37. and 16. 33, 34. It is the eye by which wee discern, 2 Cor. 3. 18. Ioh. 3. 14, 15. and 8. 56. and the hand by which wee receive Christ, Iohn 1. 12. and 6. 35. making this feast of the Lords exceeding sweet. Psalm. 119. 103.

24. When wee come to the Lords Table, wee professe our selves to be children of the same Father, 2 Cor. 6. 18. the redeemed of the same Lord, 1 Corin. 8. 6.  
such

such as be guided by the same Spirit, 1 Cor. 12. 13. ruled by the same word, fed at the same table, 1 Cor. 16. 17. members of the same body, Eph. 4. 4, 5, 6. and heires of the same Kingdome, Rom. 8. 14. 17. should we not then heartily desire the good of one another, both in soule and body. Eph. 4. 3. 1 Pet. 3. 8.

*Q. What if a man finde himselfe weake in faith, and full of doubting?*

*A. He must bewaile  $\text{g}$  his  $^{25}$  unbeliefe, pray for faith, seeke to have his doubts resolved, and so receive to be further strengthened  $^{26}$  in  $h$  believng.  $\text{g}$  Marke 9. 24.  $h$  Iudges 6. 37, 38. Exod. 12. 1, 2, 3, 4.*

*Expos.  $^{25}$ . Unbeliefe hinders the sweetnesse of the Lords ordinances, Ioh. 6. 54. 63, 64. godly sorrow for it quickens a desire, and makes way for the increase of faith, 2 Cor. 7. 10. wherefore doubtings are to be bewailed, but wee must not thereby be kept from feasting with Christ.*

$^{26}$ . The weake were admitted by Christ unto this Table, Ma. 26. 26. with 26. 56. Mark. 16. 14. Acts 1. 6. The Sacrament was ordained not onely for the strong

strong man, but even for babes in Christ, that they might wax stronger, Rom. 4. 11. 1 Cor. 3. 2, 3. they may therefore approach unto this banquet, being invited by the Master of the feast. Prov. 9. 6. Mat. 22. 9. Luk. 14. 21, 23.

Q. How ought a mans heart to be affected in receiving the Sacrament?

A. With *i* reverence, *k* joy, and *27* comfort, *l* meditating on the outward signes, and what they signifie; the dainties prepared, and love of him that prepared them; our communion with Christ, his graces, and faithfull people, whereby the heart is *m* stirred up to thanksgiving, *i* Exod. 3. 5. Gen. 28. 17. *k* Deut. 16. 15. *l* 1 Cor. 11. 25. *m* 1 King. 8. 66.

*Expos. 27.* From that which we noted before touching the actions of the Minister, and the people in the deliverie and receiving of this Sacrament, wee may learne how we ought to behave our selves in this holy businesse. Exercise the eye in seeing the elements, and the actions belonging thereunto, Exod. 24. 8. the eare in hearing the mysteries explained; the hand in receiving the elements, and the taste in feeling the comfort of them.

Exercise

Exercise also the mind in meditating and remembring of Christs sufferings, and the love of God, not only giving his Sonne to die for us, Ioha 3. 16. but offering and sealing unto us our redemption thereby; and stirre up the heart to receive Christ, Esa. 64. 7. and mourne for sinne, Zach. 12. 10. desire Gods favour, rejoyce in his love, Nehe. 8. 10. stand in awe before him, Psal. 5. 7. fearing after an holy manner, lest by any unruly affections, or unfitting gesture, wee shew the least want of due esteeme, and joy in his presence, Psal. 2. 11. and 4. 4. 1 Cor. 11. 10. and 14. 40.

*Q. What must we doe after we have received?*

*An.* Wee must<sup>28</sup> endeavour to finde an increase of faith, love, and all saving graces, abounding more and more in well-doing, *n* Proverb. 4. 18. Ezek. 47. 12.

*Expos.* 28. The receiving of the Lords Supper is a renewing of our coynant with God, Exod. 13. 9. Genes. 17. 11. 2 Chro. 30. 29. therein wee feed spiritu-ally upon Christ, 1 Cor. 10. 16. are refreshed by him, and by faith draw vertue from him;

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 161

him, Rom. 8. 2. Phil. 4. 13. therefore after we have received, we must grow more in grace and knowledge. If wee speed not well after wee have received, commonly our want of preparation was the cause thereof, or defects willingly admitted in the act of receiving. 2 Chron. 30. 19. 20. Judg. 10. 14, 15. But care must be taken, that out of dislike of our selves, wee doe not dislike, or denie that measure of grace, which the Lord bestoweth upon us; neither must wee be over-hasty: the Lord doth not alwayes poure his gifts upon us, the same day that wee come unto him in his holy ordinances. Pla. 97. 11. Cant. 3. 4. and 5, 6.

*Q. What order hath the Lord left in his Church to keepe his ordinances from contempt?*

*An.* The unruly<sup>29</sup> should<sup>30</sup> be admonished, the<sup>31</sup> obstinate *p* excommunicated, <sup>32</sup> and the penitent after their fall<sup>33</sup> restored and *q* comforted, *o* 1 Thel. 5. 14 *p* 1 Cor. 5. 4. *q* 2 Cor. 2. 6, 7.

*Expos.* 29. They are unruly, who are inordinate, live dissolutely, and such who are knowne by speech, gestures, and deeds, not to walk according to the rule

rule of the word; or busie-bodies, vain boasters; idle, &c. 2 Thes. 3. 11, 12. or be fallen into any outward sinne, 1 Cor. 6. 9.

30: Such persons being members of the Church, 1 Cor. 5. 11. 12. should be reprehended for their sinne, certainly knowne both to be sinne, and to be committed by them. Lev. 19. 17. Admonition must be performed with meeknesse and discretion, Gal. 6. 1, 2. 2 Tim. 2. 25 sometimes also with zeale and severity, 1 Cor. 4. 21. Gal. 3. 1. fitted to the person sinning, the sinne committed, and the manner of doing. Numb. 12. 9, 10, 14. If the sinne be private, knowne to few, the admonition must be private, Matth. 18. 15. Luke 17. 3. if knowne to part of the Church, admonition must be before them that know it: if knowne to the whole Church, the admonition must be publick, 1 Tim. 5. 20. unlessse it be knowne by their fault, that have published it without cause. But alwayes respect is to be had to the condition of the party offending, 1 Thes. 5. 14. and that must be done, which tends most to the edification of the Church, 1 Cor. 14. 26. If admonition

dition at the first prevaile not, then it is to be doubled, untill either the offender be reformed, or declare his obstinacie, Tit. 2. 10. 11.

31. Such are to be held obstinate who despise the Churches admonition, and will by no meanes be reclaimed from their sinne, notwithstanding the long suffering, which the Church hath used towards them. Matth. 18. 17. Tit. 2. 10, 11. 2 Tim. 2. 25.

32. To be excommunicated, is to be debarred from the publick ordinances of God, and societie of the faithfull, both publick and private, 1 Cor. 5. 3: 11. 12. 1 Tim. 1. 20. 2 Thes. 3. 6. 14. so farre as necessity will permit, either in respect of their generall, or particular calling, 1 Cor. 7. 20. and 7. 10, 11. 12. with Eph. 5. 31. The end of these censures is the humbling and reforming of the sinner; 1 Cor. 5. 5. 2 Thes. 3. 14. the terrifying of others; Tim. 5. 10. and keeping the ordinances of God in reverence. 1 Cor. 5, 6, 7.

33. The censures of the Church are medicines to cure, not poisons to destroy, inflicted for to humble, and bring into the  
the

the right way such as have gone astray, when a sinner doth truly lament the evill of his life, and is unfainedly sorrowfull, hee is to be received againe into the bosome of the Church, and comforted, lest Sathan by his devices should bring him to despaire. 2 Cor. 2. 10, 11. 1 Thes. 5. 14.

Q. Besides the fore-named meanes, are there not some other profitable for the increase of faith?

An. Yes: r reading <sup>1</sup> or <sup>2</sup> hearing the Scriptures read in s publick and t in s private, + meditation u, and w confession s, r Rev. 1. 3. s Act. 13. 15. s Act. 8. 28. u Luk. 2. 51, w Heb. 3. 13.

*Expos. 1.* The reading, or hearing of the Scripture read, doth furnish the mind more with knowledge, 1 Pet. 1. 19. Prov. 1. 5. Deut. 11. 10. 20. and work upon the affections, Deut. 17. 18, 19. 2 Kin. 22. 11, 19. Psal. 119. 93. especially if wee apply the commandemens for our direction, the threatnings to feare us from sinne, or to humble us for it. 2 Chro. 34. 19. 27. and the promises for our comfort and encouragement.

2. As God requires that the Scriptures should

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 165

should be read in publique. 1 Thes. 5. 27. Col. 4. 16. so thereby he hath promised, that his people may learne to feare him, Deut. 31. 12, 13.

3 Private reading maketh the publick Ministry more profitable, Acts 8. 30, 31. enableth us better to iudge of the Doctrines taught, Acts 17. 11. thereby wee are better fitted for the combat, 1 Tim. 4. 13. 15. and many evils are prevented, Esa. 8. 19, 20. Psal. 119. 9. Iob 22. 21.

4 Meditation is availeable for the getting of grounded and settled knowledge, 2 Tim. 2. 7. Psal. 119. 99. and the increase thereof, 1 Tim. 4. 13. 15. it strengtheneth memory. 119. 15. 16. enlargeth our delight in good. Psal. 104. 34. Psal. 119. 16. discovereth corruption, purgeth the heart of idle and unprofitable wandrings, addeth life and strength to holy duties, Gen. 24. 63. Psal. 143. 5. 6. and hereby we grow more inwardly acquainted with God. Psal. 77. 10. 11. 22. this duty must bee practised every day more or lesse. Psal. 119. 97.

5. All such who with wisdom. Pro. 10. 32. and 15. 22. Psal. 37. 30. reverence, 1 Per. 4. 11. love, the spirit of meeknesse

M

and

and gentlenesse, Tit. 3. 2. Col. 4. 6. Ph. 2. 2, 3. and a desire of reaping good, do conferre religiously, shall prevent rotten speeches, Ephes. 4. 29. hardnesse of heart. Heb. 3. 13. and much evill; Eccl. 5. 2. shall increase in knowledge, Pro. 1. 5. be resolved of their doubts, Col. 3. 16. 1. Thes. 5. 11. Job. 16. 4. 5. armed against falling, Acts 11. 23. Iudge. 2. Pro. 18. 8. and quickned from their dulnesse. Heb. 10. 33. This will kindle desire of more fellowship with Christ, Cant. 5. 16. and sweeten the communion of Saints. Rom. 1. 11. 12. 1 Thes. 3. 2 Rom. 15. 32. 24. v. These duties must carefully bee practised of every man, as hee hath opportunitie and meanes. Matthew 25. 27. 2 Cor. 8. 12.

*Q* *Hitherto of the ordinary meanes, whereby faith is increased: be there not also some extraordinary meanes?*

*A* *Yes*; and these be holy x fasting, holy feasting and religious z bowes. x Luke. 5. 35. y Eit. 9. 17 z Psal. 50. 14.

6. By extraordinary duties are meant such, which be of more seldome and rare practise, though they must bee used oft, as God giveth occasion, and when hee calleth

with an Exposition upon the same. 167

callecth thereunto.

2. What is an holy fast?

An. A religious a bſtinence from all  
b the labours of our calling, and c com-  
forts of this life, ſo far as comlineſſe and  
neceſſity will permit, that wee might be  
more ſeriouſly d humbled ſ before God,  
and more fervent in prayer a Heſt. 4. 16.  
b Lev. 23. 28. c Exod. 33. 5. d Dan. 9. 9. 11.  
Lev. 23. 27.

Expoſ. 7. A faſt is to be kept as a Sab-  
bath unto God. Lev. 23. 28. Eſa. 58. 13,  
14. And therefore as upon the Sab-  
bath, ſuch buſineſſes of this life muſt  
bee avoided, that agree not with the  
Sabbath.

8. By the comforts of this life, we are  
to underſtand meat, drink, and apparell;  
recreation, and all other delights, Dan.  
10. 3. Cor. 7. 5.

9. With faſting muſt be joyned a ſeri-  
ous meditation of our finnes. Ezz. 9. 4. 6.  
Neh. 1. 6 7. Gods iudgements. Neh. 9. 35.  
36, 37. and our ſpeciall wants. Dan. 9. 11.  
18. The perſon meet for this exerciſe  
muſt be no novice in religion Luke 5. 36,  
37. Matth. 9, 15. 16. A faſt is either of  
one alone, 2 Sam. 12. 16. or of the whole

family. Zac. 12. 12. or of a particular congregation, or of the whole Church in generall. Iudg. 20. 26.

*Q. When ought we to fast?*

*A.* When we feele or teare some grievous <sup>10</sup> calamity upon us, or hanging over <sup>11</sup> our heads; want some speciall <sup>12</sup> blessing, are pressed with some speciall sinne, or goe about some weighty matter. *e* Hest. 4. 16. Eslr. 8. 21. *f* Act. 13. 2.

*Expos.* 10. As sword, famine, pestilence, strange unwonted sicknesses, unseasonable weather, &c. Ezek. 14. 21. with Esa. 22. 12, 13.

11. These judgements hang over our heads, which our sinnes, and the sinnes of the land have deserved, and crie for, Amos. 8. 5. 8. Iam. 5. 4. Genes. 18. 20. and which God hath threatned by his word and ministrie. Zeph. 1. 3, 4, 5. with Zach. 1. 6. Lam. 1. 13, 14. 20. with 2. 17. and hath inflicted formerly upon like transgressors. Ier. 7. 12. Amos. 6. 2, 3.

12. Notwithstanding the ordinary and dayly prayers of his people, the Lord in great wisdom will see them want some speciall good thing, that they may seeke him more earnestly in the use of the duty  
of

of fasting. Iudg 20. 28.

*Q. What is an holy feast?*

*A.* an<sup>13</sup> extraordinary thanksgiving for some notable deliverance, out of some desperate danger; testified<sup>14</sup> with feasting before God, with ioy and gladnesse, sending presents to our friends, and portions to the needy. *g* 1 Chron. 16. 8. and 29. 10, 11. *b* Neh. 8. 19. Hest. 9. 22.

*Expos. 13.* In a day of extraordinarie thanksgiving there should bee a serious remembrance of Gods benefits. Psal. 116. 6. and 103. 2. whereby we should bee stirred up after a fervent manner to yeeld praise to the Lord. Psal. 34. 3. and 35. 27. Exod. 15. 2. and reioyce before him heartily. Deut. 12. 12. tying our selves unto him by renewing our covenant. Ioh. 2. 9. Deut. 29. 3. 10, 11, 12, 13. 2 Chron. 15. 11, 12. and learne to bee more confident in him, having experience of his great goodnesse. Psalme 3. 5. 6. and 52. 9.

14. On the day of thanksgiving wee may have a more liberall use of Gods creatures, both in meat and apparell, than is ordinary. Neh. 8. 10. Hest. 9. 22.

But this must be used in moderation and sobriety, that men may be better fitted for the exercises of religion 1 King. 8. 65. This Exercise, if it be publique, must be joynd with the preaching of the word; if private, with the reading of the Scripture, or some holy exhortation, for the better stirring up of affection.

*Q. What is a religious vow?*

A. A solemn promise unto God, made by a <sup>15</sup> fit person of some <sup>16</sup> lawfull thing, which <sup>17</sup> is in his choice, to testify his love and <sup>18</sup> thankfulness, 1 Deut. 23. 21, 22. Prov. 20. 25.

15. Such persons are fit to vow, who have knowledge, iudgement, and ability to discern of a vow, and of the duties belonging to the performance of the same. Eccl. 5. 2.

16. A man may not vow an unlawfull, vile or superstitious thing; Deut. 23. 18. for we are obliged to avoyd all evill, yea all appearance of evill. 1 Thess. 5. 22. It is presumption and rashnesse to vow that to God, which he hath forbidden, and will not accept. Iudg. 11. 30, 31.

17. What we are not able to performe either by reason of the common frailty,  
of

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 171

of all men. Eccl. 5. 5. with 1 Cor. 7. 7. or of our subiection unto others, we may not vow, as the wife, child, servant, may not vow, without the liberty of their superiours, Num. 10. 3. 4. 6. 7. 8. 12. That thing is not to bee held in our free choise which we are necessarily bound unto before our vow. Lev. 27. 25. Deut. 23. 22. 23. But yet to quicken and stirre us up the better to the performance of our dutie, it is lawfull to renew the covenant and vow, which we made unto the Lord in Baptisme, Psal. 119. 106. To God vowes were commonly made with prayers, Gen. 28. 20. Psal. 61. 5. and paid with thanksgiving. Psal. 65. 1. and 66. 13. 14. and 116. 14. John 2. 9.

18. Vowes should bee performed speedily. Eccl. 5. 5. Deut. 23. 23. Psal. 76. 11. If we vow rashly, the rashnes is to be repented of, the vow otherwise lawfull is to be performed; but a vow should not in any wise be the bond of iniquity. Matth. 15. 5, 6. 1 Sam. 25. 22. 39. Acts 23. 21.

*Q. Can faith being wrought and confirmed in us be fruitlesse and unprofitable?*

*An. No: 19 for it k worketh by love,*  
*& Gal. 5. 6.*

*Expos.* 19. By faith wee are knit unto Christ. Rom. 11. 19, 20. Eph. 3. 17. and cannot be utterly fruitlesse. Iohn 15. 5. seeing wee receive the sappe of grace from him. Ioh. 1. 16. Col. 1. 19.

*Q.* What is the principall worke of faith?

*An.* It <sup>20</sup> purifieth / the heart. Acts 15. 9.

*Expos.* 20. To purifie the heart is to abate and crucifie the power of sinne in the beleevers, and by little and little to renew them in holnesse and righteousnesse, Gal. 5. 24. and 6. 14. The spirit of God is the author of Sanctification. Ioh. 3. 5. 1 Cor. 6. 11. Gal. 5. 22. Rom. 8. 11. faith is the instrument of the holy Ghost, whereby the heart is cleansed. Col. 3. 12.

*Q.* What followeth thereupon?

*An.* A fighting <sup>21</sup> and combating against sinne and corruption. Gal. 5. 17.

*Expos.* 21. Those that are sanctified, are sanctified in every part. Col. 2. 11. 1 Thes. 5. 23. Eph. 4. 24. Col. 3. 10. and yet but in part. Prov. 30. 2, 3. Phil. 3. 12. Rom. 8. 13. Col. 3. 5. so that grace and corruption are mingled together in the best: Rom. 6. 13. and 7. 25. whence followeth

a spirituall combate, not of the mind with the will, or the will with the affections onely, Numb. 22. 34. nor of divers desires onely, in respect of sundry, and different considerations; but of the part regenerate with the part unregenerate, Gal. 5. 17. as of the mind regenerate with the mind unregenerate and so of the will, &c. This combat is continuall, against the first motions to sinne, not onely against outward grosse evill. Rom. 8. 13. Eph. 4. 22. Rom. 6. 17. The effect hereof is, that a man sanctified cannot doe what hee would, Gal. 5. 17. sometimes hee is grievously foiled by the flesh, Matth. 26. 40, 41. but in the end the spirit shall get the victorie. 1 John. 4. 4. and 5. 4. Rom. 8. 2. Rev. 2. 26.

*Q. What else?*

*A.* A renouncing of all evill in <sup>22</sup> affection, and of <sup>23</sup> grosse sinne in life and conversation. *l* Act, 2. 38. *m.* Act. 19. 18. 19.

*Expos. 22.* A pure heart can no more delight in evill, than a cleane fountaine can send forth corrupt waters. Psal 24. 4. Esa. 32. 6. 8. Pro. 12. 5. therefore a purged heart must renounce all evill. Ezek 36.

26. 27. Ier. 32. 39. 40.

23. The will is the commander of the outward man. 2 Cor. 8. 11. if it bee turned unto God, the conversation must needs be reformed. Ier. 3. 14. 17. 1 Sam. 12. 20. 21. 1 King. 8. 48. 49.

*Q. What is a third thing that followeth hence?*

*A. Love* <sup>n</sup> and <sup>24</sup> delight in that which is good, toynd with a sincere <sup>25</sup> desire, purpose, and <sup>o</sup> endeavour daily to amend whatsoever is amisse, and to <sup>p</sup> lead a life according <sup>26</sup> to the law of God. <sup>n</sup> Ps. 119. 97. <sup>o</sup> Phil. 3. 13. 14. Acts 11. 23. <sup>p</sup> Psal. 11. 6.

*Expos.* 24. The same spirit which wrought the grace of faith, and cleanse the heart, doth sweetly incline it both to long after, and to cleave with ioy to that which is good. Ezek. 36. 27. Ezek. 11. 19. 20. Rom. 6. 19. Psal. 86. 11.

25. The true beleever hath laid aside the practise and desire of all sinne. Psal. 119. 113. 128. 163. not onely out of a foresight of the ill consequences, and fearefull evils that may fall, 1 King. 8. 47. Ezek. 18. 28. Luk. 15. 17. but even out of love to the chiefest good, and all goodnes

goodnesse, 2 Cor. 5. 14. and that with a true purpose, Psal. 119. 106. Act. 11. 23. and well advised deliberation: Ruth. 1. 16. therefore hee is willing to espie out, and reforme whatsoever is out of order. Psalme 119, 59. But note heere, that all have not the like measure of grace. Rom. 12. 3. neither can with like victorie overcome their corruption, Rom. 14. 1. and 15. 1. Phil. 3. 15. The strong should not wax proud, Rom. 11. 20. Galat. 6. 1. Rom. 14. 3. nor the weake be dismayed overmuch. Rom. 14. 4. Mar. 4. 31. 32.

26. The redeemed of the Lord doe see that many waies they are bound to obey, Psalme 100. 2. 3. and 86. 13. 1 Cor. 6. 19. 20. 1 Pet. 1. 17. 18. and also that it is a blessed thing to beare the yoke. Mat. 11. 29. 1 Iohn 5. 3. Psal. 65. 4. and 119. 14. Gal. 6. 16. and so they resolve to deny their owne will, and follow the Lord, Phil. 1. 27. and 3. 20. Act. 26. 7. 1 Pet. 4. 2. 3.

*Q. Wherein is the summe of the Law contained?*

*A. In the 10 tenne & Commandements,*  
Deut. 10. 4. and 4. 13.

*Expos. 1. These tenne Commandements*

ments are an abridgement of the whole Law, the full exposition whereof is to be found in the bookes of the Prophets, and Apostles, and holy men, who wrote by inspiration of the Spirit. *Exod. 34. 27. 1 King. 8. 9. Matth. 22. 40.* for the right understanding of the ten Commandments, called the Decalogue, observe these rules.

1. The Law is spirituall, binding the soule and conscience to entire obedience. *Rom. 7. 14. Matth. 5. 21. 22. 27. 28.*

2. The meaning of the precept is to be drawne from the maine scope and end thereof. *Matth. 5. 33, 34, 35, 36, 37.*

3. The Commandement which forbiddeth a sinne, commandeth the contrary duty; and the commandement which requireth a duty, forbiddeth the contrary sinne. *Psal. 34. 12. 14. Esa. 1. 16. 17. Mar. 3. 4.*

4. Vnder one vice expressely forbidden all of the same kind, and that necessarily depend thereon, as also the least cause, occasion, or inticement thereunto are likewise forbidden. *Matth. 5. 21. 22.*

17. 18. 1 Iohn 3. 15.

Vnder one duty expressed, all of the like nature are comprehended, as all meanes, effects, and whatsoever is necessarily required for the performance of that duty: and therefore in divers, yea in all the commandements one and the same duty may in divers respects bee commanded, and one and the same sinne may be forbidden.

6. Where the more honourable person is expressed, as the man, let the woman understand that the precept concerneth her.

7. Where the duty of one man standing in relation to another is taught, there is taught also the duties of all that stand in the like relation one unto another; as when the duty of one inferiour towards his superiour is taught, there is taught the generall dutie which all superiours owe to those that bee under them, which inferiours owe to them that bee over them, and which equalls owe one to another.

*Q. How are they divided?*

*A. Into two Tables, Deut. 5. 22. and 10. 1. 2.*

*Expos.*

*Expos.* 2. From the Commandements, as they are set downe wee may observe.

1. That the Law is most perfectly wise, iust, equall, and strictly binding the consciences of all men without exception, and that continually. Deut. 4.5. &c. Psal. 19.7. &c.

2. For order of doctrine there is a perfect distinction of one commandement from another: but as touching practise they are so nearely knit together, that no one can be perfectly obeyed, unlesse all be obeyed, and hee that breaketh one commandement, transgresseth the whole law. Deut. 27.26. Gal. 3.10. Iam. 2.10.11.

3. The love of God is the ground of our love to our neighbour, 1 Iohn 4.20. and 5.1.2.

4. Our love to our neighbour is a testimony of our love to God. Romans 13.8.9.10.

5. Such as bee truly religious must have respect unto all Gods commandements, Psal 119.6.

6. The duties of the first Table are most excellent; and the breaches thereof more grievous than of the second, if  
equall

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 179

equall proportion be observed, and comparison bee made. 1 Sam. 2. 25. Esa. 7. 13.

7. If two Commandements cannot bee performed at once, the lesser must give place to the greater: so the love of God must bee preferred before the love of our neighbour, and morall duties before outward circumstances. Hof. 6. 6. Matth. 12. 4.

8. The Law is set forth as a rule of life to them that are in Christ, therefore our obedience is to bee performed unto God in and through Iesus Christ, Matth. 16. 17. 18. 19. Exod. 19. 6. 7. 8. with 20. 1. &c.

9. All sinnes here forbidden are to be shunned, and that both alwayes, and at all times: The duties commanded are perpetuall, to bee practised when the Lord giveth opportunity, and calleth thereunto.

*Q. Which are the Commandements of the first Table?*

*An.* The foure first, and they teach us the duty, which wee owe unto God immediatly.

*Q. Which are the Commandements of the*  
*the*

the second Table ?

A. The six last, which instruct us in our duty towards our neighbour. Ephes. 6. 2.

Q. Which is the first Commandement?

A. I am the Lord thy God, &c. Thou shalt have none other Gods before my face.

Q. What is the generall duties required in this Commandement ?

A. That in 3 mind, will, affection, and the effects of these we take the true God in Christ to be our God.

Expos. 3. The speciall duties of this commandement, are knowledge of God, acknowledgement, estimation, Deut. 4. 39. Isa. 43. 10. Psal. 89. 6. 7, &c. and 9. 1. Ier. 24. 7. and 9. 24. Col. 1. 10. Mic. 7. 18. faith, trust, 2 Chron. 20. 20. Psal. 27. 1. 3. and 37. 5. love, Deut. 6. 5. Psal. 18. 1. Mar. 10. 37. feare, reverence. Psal. 2. 10. 11. and 4. 4. 1 Pet. 1. 17. Matth. 10. 28. Ier. 10. 6. 7. and 5. 22. Levit. 19. 14. Psal. 130. 3. Rev. 15. 3. 4. hope. Lam. 3. 24. 26 Rom. 15. 13. Ierem. 17. 13. humility. 1 Pet. 5. 6. Mic. 6. 8. Gen. 32. 10. patience. Psal. 39. 9. Rom. 12. 12. Heb. 10. 36. Iob. 1. 21. Ier. 14. 22. loy, Psal. 33. 1. zeale, or feryour  
of

of will, Gal. 4. 18. desire of Gods presence in heaven, Phil. 1. 27. 2 Tim. 4. 8. Rev. 22. 17. 20. invocation, Psal. 32. 6. and 65. 2. Phil. 45. 6. thankfulness. Psal. 75. 1. and 56. 12. 13. swearing by God alone, Deut. 10. 20 adoration, Deut. 6. 13. and 10. 20. Matth. 4. 10. and profession of his name, 1 Pet. 3. 15. Matth. 13. 32. Dan. 3. 17. and 6. 11. Rom. 10. 10.

*Q.* What is the generall sinne here forbidden?

*A.* All 4 failing to give God that aforesaid honour, which is due unto him: or else in whole, or in part giving it to any other.

*Expos.* 4. The finnes forbidden are Atheisme, Psal. 14. 1. Tit. 1. 16. Exod. 5. 2. ignorance, Ier. 4. 22. and 9. 3. Psal. 14. 3. error concerning God, Rom. 1. 23. Ioh. 5. 23. infidelitie, distrust, Heb. 10. 38. Isa. 7. 9. Ier. 17. 5. 6. presumption, Matth. 4. 7. 1 Cor. 10. 6. 10. Num. 15. 30. 31. want of love, 1. Cor. 16. 22. of feare or reverence, Psal. 36. 1. Deut. 28. 58. 59. prophaneffe. Rom. 1. 30. 2 Pet. 3. 4. 5. Pro. 1. 22. despaire, Genes. 4. 13. impatience, Exod. 16. 3. and 17. 2. 3. deadnesse and hardnesse of heart, Rom. 2. 5. Luk. 2. 34.

and unthankfulnesse, Rom. 1, 21.

5. Also pride, Acts 12, 23. Dan. 4. 26.  
27. Luk. 18, 14. confidence in wit, wealth,  
friends, wicked devices. Ier 17, 5, 6. and  
49, 16. 2 Chro. 16, 12. carnall love, Mat.  
10, 37. Ioh. 12, 43. 2 Tim. 3, 2. feare of  
man more than of God, Rev. 21, 8. Mat.  
10, 28. Ier. 10, 2. base delights that draw  
the heart from the fountain of goodnesse,  
Mat. 24, 37. Luk. 21, 34. and 14, 18, &c.  
Invocation of wood, stone, or Saints de-  
parted, Dan. 3, 2. &c. Esa. 63, 16. sacrific-  
ing to our nets, Hab. 1, 16. or blessing an  
Idoll, Esa. 66, 3. 1 Sam. 31, 9. Psal. 106. 28.  
dedicating holy dayes to the honour of  
Saints, Exod. 32, 6. or to the Crosse pro-  
fessing homage, or obedience to the Pope,  
1 Cor. 7, 23. representing God by an  
Image. Deut. 4, 12, 15. Esa. 40, 18. so-  
ciety of marriage with idolaters of this  
kind, Deut. 7, 1. Exod. 34. 21, 16. 2 Chro.  
21, 6. seeking to wizards for help, Levit.  
20, 6. 1 Sam. 28, 11. &c. and ascribing  
any thing, whether it property, work,  
or glory that belongeth to the Lord a-  
lone, to any creature, or thing, though  
wee acknowledge it to be no god, Ephes.  
5, 5. Phil. 3, 14. Exod. 32, 8. Rom. 1. 23. 25.  
1 Cor.

1 Cor. 10, 20.

*Q. Which is the second Commandement?*

*An. Thou shalt not make to thy selfe any graven Image, &c.*

*Q. What is the generall dutie which this Commandement requireth?*

*An. That we do<sup>e</sup> worship the true God purely, according to his will.*

*Expos. 6.* The particular duties of this precept comprised under that generall are, hearing and reading the Word, and prayer, either publick or private, Mat. 28, 19, 20. Deut. 33, 10. Luk. 4, 15. and 11, 1, and 1, 10. 1 Tim. 2, 1. administration of the Sacraments, Matth. 3, 1, 6. and 26, 26, &c. and discipline, Mat. 18, 15. &c. 2 Cor. 2, 6. 2 Thes. 3, 15. meditation, Psal. 1, 2. and 37, 31, and 77, 15, confession, Deut. 6, 7. Mal. 2, 16 fasting, Luke 5, 35. Acts 13, 2. and feasting, Eccl. 9, 17, with all meanes and furtherance thereof. All which must bee approved, exercised, maintained, and performed purely, as God offereth opportunity, without carnall imaginations and conceits, Deut. 4, 2. and 12, 32. Acts 17, 29, Esay 40, 18, 23, &c.

*Q. What is the generall sinne forbidden?*

*A.* All omission of Gods true worship when it is required, and all false worship, either invented by others, or taken up of our owne heads.

*Expos.* 7. The omission of any of the former particular duties required, as of hearing, &c. Luke 14. 19. Esa. 64. 7. is here forbidden. As also carnall imaginations in Gods worship. Act. 17. 29. liking and approbation of our owne inventions, Numb. 15. 39. making images for a religious use, Levit. 19. 4. and 26. 1. worshipping God in, at, or before an image, 1 King. 19. 18. 2 Kin. 18. 1. adding to, or detracting from, or changing any thing of the word of God, instituting false Sacraments or offices in Gods Church, Deu. 4. 2. and 12. 32. 1 Kin. 12. 31. 32. will-worship, grounded onely upon good intent or custome; Matth. 15. 9. Col. 2. 18. 10. as Popish fastings, going on pilgrimage, vovues of povertie, single life, or any superstitious or vaine thing: tying Gods presence to time or place, Numb. 23. 28. 29. 1 Sam. 4. 4. 7. 2 Sam. 15. 25. Job 4. 20. praying upon beads, maintaining of any idolatrous customes, as fit and decent

cent to adorne and beautifie the worship of God, Deut. 12. 30. Esa. 30. 22. Society with false worshippers of God in marriage, Deut. 7. 3. 4. Exod. 23. 32. 33. and making leagues of amity with them. 2. Chron. 19. 1. 2.

*Q. What is the third commandment?*

*An. Thou shalt not take the Name of the Lord thy God in vaine, &c.*

*Q. What is the generall duty required in this Commandement?*

*An. That wee should use the titles, properties, works, and ordinances of the Lord with knowledge, faith, reverence, ioy, and sincerity, in thought, word, and conversation.*

*Expos. 8. The speciall duties of this precept are, reverent meditation of Gods titles, properties, and Word, Psalm. 8. 1. &c. psalm. 1. 2. and diligent observation of his workes, both of creation, and providence, mercy and judgement, psal: 104. 24. and 107. 43. Hearing the word, and calling upon Gods name, with desire, Psalm. 42. 1. care, diligence, Eccle, 4. 17. Iob 5. 27. constancy. Psalm. 122. 2. zeale, Iam. 5. 16. Matth. 11. 12. faith, Iam. 1. 6. Ioh. 5. 24. ioy, Matth. 13. 44. and humility*

licie, Efa. 66.2. and 57.15. Receiving the Sacrament with due preparation and right affection, 1 Cor. 11. 21.28. Num. 9. 6. 8 c. making confession of our finnes with griefe, Eze. 9. Dan. 9. broken-heartednesse, Psal. 51.17. and purpose of amendment, Iob. 39.37. 38. Speaking of Gods Word and works with sincerity, feare, and reverence, upon just occasions, Psalm. 119. 46 Deut. 28. 58. Swearing by the Name of God in truth, judgement, and equitie, being lawfully called thereunto, Ier. 4. 2. using apparell, meat drink, sleep, recreation, &c. after a sanctified manner, with prayer, moderation, and to the glory of GOD, 1 Tim. 2. 9. Luke 21. 34. 1 Tim. 4. 4. 5. 1 Cor. 10. 31. and with an outward profession of religion, joyning an unblameable conversation, Phil. 1. 27. 1 Pet. 3. 1, 2. Tit. 2. 10. Matthew 5. 16.

*Q. What is the generall sin forbidden?*

*A. Omitting the duty here required, using his <sup>10</sup> Name when we ought not, or otherwise than we should.*

*Q. When is the Name of God taken otherwise than it should?*

*A. When it is used ignorantly, superstitiously,*

stittoufly, without faith rashly, not to a right end, hypocritically, falsely, against conscience, and when men name themselves Christians, but live scandalously.

*Expof.* 9. The speciall finnes forbidden are omission or neglect to know, Psal. 92 5. 6. &c. observe, Zeph. 3. 5. mediate, or make use of the titles, properties, ordinances, or works of God, Mat. 13. 19. and 7. 26. &c. and 10. And also light, unreverent, vaine, false, superstitious, or wicked thinking thereof, Mal. 2. 17. Psal. 50. 21. praying without understanding, 1 Cor. 14. 15. desire or care to speed, Matth. 6. 7. or faith in Gods promises, Rom. 10. 14. Hearing without attention, or care to get good thereby, Ezek. 33. 30. Acts 28. 21. 22. receiving the Sacrament ignorantly, for custome, without holy preparation, and affection required, 1 Cor. 11. 17. &c. Swearing vainly, Jer. 5. 7. Matth. 5. 34. rashly, 2 Sam. 19. 7. Eccl. 9. 2. falsely, Zach. 5. 3. Jer. 5. 2. and wicked blasphemie against God, Levit. 24. 11. 2 Kings 19. 22. cursing and banning, 1 Sam. 17. 43. abusing the creatures in excesse, Amos 6. 1. &c. or su-

perstition, Col. 2, 20, 21, Gen. 32, 32, making a sport of sinne, Pro. 14, 9, Ier. 11, 15, and living scandalously in the profession of religion, 2 Sam. 12, 14.

*Qu. Which is the fourth Commandement?*

An, Remember the Sabbath day, &c.

*Q. What is the generall duty heere required?*

An. That the whole Sabbath or Lords day be set apart from all common use, as holy to the Lord, both publique-ly and private-ly in the practice of the duties of necessity, holinesse, and mercie.

*Expos. 11.* In this Commandement it is enjoyned, that wee finish all our worldly busines in six dayes, Deut. 5, 23, and that wee rise betimes in the morning upon the Sabbath, Marke. 1, 35, compared with vers. 38, 39, Exod. 32, 5, 6, psal. 92, 2, and prepare our selves for the publique Congregation, by prayer, meditation, thanksgiving, and examination of our hearts, Eccles. 4, 17, ps. 93, 5, 2 Tim. 2, 19, going about the workes of mercy, and instant necessitie with heavenly mindes, Math. 12, 1, &c. Luk. 13, 15. It

is also required that wee ioyne with the people of God in the publique Congregation, hearing the word read and preached, calling upon Gods Name, receiving the Sacraments, praying God for his mercies, singing of Psalmes, 2 Kings 4. 23. Act. 13. 14. 15. 44. and 15. 21. and 16. 13. and 17. 2. and 20. 7. In which exercises wee must bee all the while attentive, Act. 16. 14. reverent, Esay 66. 2. and eager to get good, psal. 42. 1. 2. not departing till the blessing bee pronounced, Ezek. 46. 1. 2. 10. Act. 10. 33. 1 Cor. 14. 16. After, the whole day is to bee spent with delight and cheerefulnesse, in religious meditation, reading and conference, and workes of necessity and mercy, Esa. 58. 13. 14. Acts 17. 11. psal. 1. 2. Luke 24. 14. 17. 1 Cor. 16. 2.

*Q.* What is the generall sinne here forbidden?

*An.* All neglecting <sup>12</sup> of the duties of that time, <sup>13</sup> prophaning of that day, in whole or in part, by needlesse workes, words, or thoughts, about our callings or recreations.

*Expos.* 12. Here is forbidden idlenesse or a negligent omission of any duty required

quired, either in whole or in part, for matter or manner: as sleeping out the Sabbath in the morning, sleight preparing our selves for the publique assembly, absence from it, comming late, sleeping there, staring about, going forth before the blessing, misapplying the word **Mat. 20.6.** **Acts 20. 9.**

13. All prophanation of the Sabbath, or any moment of that precious time, with worldly cares, words, or businesse, is condemned also, **Esay 58. 13.** as travelling journeyes, **Exod. 16. 29. 30.** keeping faires, **Neh. 13. 15. 16. 17.** labouring in seed-time and harvest. **Exod. 34. 21.** going on trifling errands, &c. vaine recreations, as bowling, shooting, hunting, stoole-ball, &c. on this day are unlawfull.

*Q. Which day is to be set apart as holy to the Lord?*

**A.** It is moꝛ all and perpetuall to keep one day in seven as holy: from the creation to the resurrection of **Christ** the seventh day was instituted; after **Christ** his resurrection the <sup>14</sup> first day of the week was ordained and is to be kept for ever.

14. The work of our redemption is the greatest work that ever was; **John 3.**

16, and by Christ his resurrection from the dead, a new Creation was as it were finished: wherefore seeing that hee rose againe the first day, it was (as Divines agree) meet the Sabbath should be changed to the first day, Acts 20. 7. 1 Cor. 16. 2.

*Q. Which is the first Commandement?*

*An. Honour thy Father and thy Mother, &c.*

*Q. Who are meant by Father and Mother?*

*A. Not onely naturall parents, but also<sup>s</sup> all Superiours in office, age, and gifts.*

*Expos. 15. All Superiours are called by the name father and mother, 2 Kin. 2. 12. and 5. 13. Esa. 19. 13. because they are sweet and pleasant names, apt to signifie both the affection that Superiours ought to beare towards their inferiours, and also to perswade inferiours cheerfully to performe their dutie. Household societie also is of all others the first, from which all others spring, by the encrease of mankind, Gen. 4. 1. 2. and 9. 1.*

*Q. What is it to honour?*

*A. To acknowledge the excellency that*

that is in men by vertue of their place,  
and accordingly to yeeld it to them.

*Qa. Are the duties of inferiours onely  
here intended?*

An. *Re:* but of superiours and equals  
also.

*Q. What then is the generall duty re-  
quired in this Commandement?*

An. That we carefully <sup>16</sup> obserue that  
order **G D D** hath appointed amongst  
men, and doe the duties which wee owe  
unto them, in respect of their places and  
degrees,

*Expos.* 16 Of all men as they stand  
in relation one to another, here is requi-  
red wisdom, and justice to yeeld to eve-  
ry man, that which appertaines to his  
place, 1 Pet. 2. 17. love and diligence in  
fitting themselves with gifts meet for  
their place, 2 Tim. 2. 15. and doing their  
duties modestly, Iob 31. 13. 14. and mo-  
deration in bearing with the defects of  
others Gal. 6. 1. and prayer for the mu-  
tuall good of others, Iam. 5. 16.

*Qu. What is the dutie of inferiours  
to their Superiours?*

An. To be subiect, <sup>17</sup> reverent, and  
thankfull, bearing with their wants,  
and

and covering them in love.

*Expos.* 17. the wholesome lawes of Magistrates must carefully bee observed, Tit. 3. 1. 1 Pet. 2. 13. Romans 13. 2. their persons revered, Prov. 24. 21. 1 Pet. 2. 17. and defended with the goods, body, and life of the subiect; and to them tribute and custome is freely and willingly to bee payed, Rom. 13. 6. 7. 2 Sam. 18. 3. and 21. 17. The Ministers of the Gospel must bee had in singular love for their workes sake, 1 Thesse 5. 13. their doctrine must bee received with gladnes of heart, Heb. 13. 17. Luke 10. 16. 1 Thess. 2. 13. themselves defended against the wrongs of wicked men, Rom 16. 4. and made partakers of all good things for this life, Galat. 6. 6. Wives must after a speciall manner love, feare, and obey their husbands, yea though they bee froward; which must bee manifested in word and behaviour, Ephes. 5. 33. 22. 23. 24. Col. 3. 18. 1 Pet. 3. 1. 1 Sam. 25. 3. they must be helpers to them in godlines, and in the things of this life Gen. 2. 18. 1 Pet. 3. 1. Proverb. 31. Children must imbrace the instructions of their parents, continue in feare and obediencie to the end, not be-

slow

flow themselves in marriage without  
 their consent, Ephes 6, 1. Luk. 2, 51. Exod.  
 18, 19. Ruth 3, 5, Iudg. 14, 2, and mini-  
 ster freely unto their necessities, 1 Tim.  
 5, 4. Gen. 47, 12. Servants must wisely,  
 faithfully, willingly, and painfully, be-  
 stow their time appointed in their go-  
 vernors service, Tit. 2, 9, 10. Eph. 6, 5, 6.  
 Gen. 31, 38. 1 Tim. 6, 1, 2. submitting  
 themselves to holy instruction, bearing  
 rebukes and chastisements, though they  
 bee uniuert; without grudging, stomack,  
 sullen countenance, answering againe,  
 or resistance, Tit. 2, 9, 1 Pet. 2, 18, untill  
 they can use some iust and lawfull reme-  
 dy. Weak Christians must not censure  
 the strong, for using their liberty, Rom.  
 14, 2, 3. Young men must give due re-  
 spect to the aged, asking their counsell,  
 rising up before them, giving them leave  
 to speak before them, &c. Titus 2, 6.  
 1 Pet. 5, 5. Levit. 19, 32. Iob. 32, 46. Infe-  
 riors in gifts, must not grudge or dis-  
 daine their superiours, but seek to make  
 benefit of the gifts that God hath given  
 them, Iob. 4, 19, Rom. 16, 1, 2, 3. &c. All  
 these duties are cheerefully, dilligently,  
 and faithfully to be performed to superi-  
 ours,

ours, though they be wicked and ungodly, in respect of the Commandement, will and authority of God, who hath so appointed, Psal. 119, 4, 14, 32, 117.

Q. What is the duty of Superiours?

AN. To carry <sup>18</sup> themselves gravely, meekely, and after a seemely manner towards their inferiours.

Expos. 18. Magistrates ought by all good meanes to procure the good of their subiects, making holy and iust lawes for the maintenance of piety and iustice; appointing officers that be wise, couragious, and fearing God, to see iustice executed; and labouring to root out sinne by punishing offenders iustly, and encouraging the godly, 1 Tim. 2, 8. 2 Chron. 19, 5. &c. Rom. 13, 4. Deut. 7, 18, 19. Psal. 101, 6, 7, 8. 1 Pet. 2, 13. Esay. 49, 23. Ministers must labour in private reading, meditation, prayer, and publick teaching, by instruction, exhortation, rebuke, and comfort; keeping the holy things of GOD from contempt, and watching over their flocks, that their people bee not corrupted by false doctrine, or by scandalous conversation, 1 Tim. 4, 13, 16, & 3, 2, &c. 1 Sam. 12, 23, Deut.

Deut. 33. 9. 10. Ezek. 33. 7. &c. and 34. 4.  
 Acts 20. 28. Matth. 7. 6. Prov. 27. 23. Ezek.  
 44. 23. 24. Husbands must chooserelegi-  
 ous wives, dwell with them as men of  
 knowledge, loving them dearly, bea-  
 ring with their infirmities, protecting  
 them, providing things necessary for  
 their state and calling, allowing them  
 competent maintenance, employment,  
 and liberty, specially for the service of  
 God, reioycing and delighting in them,  
 prudently admonishing them in great  
 love and tenderesse, and praying them  
 for their faithfulness, 2. Cor. 6. 14. 1. Pet.  
 3. 7. Eph. 5. 33. Gen. 34. 6. 7. Gen. 20. 16.  
 1 Sam. 30. 5. 8. Eph. 5. 28. 29. Exod. 21.  
 10. Prov. 5. 18. Gen. 26. 8. Esa. 62. 5. Gen.  
 30. 2. Job 2. 13. Fathers must bring their  
 children to holy Baptisme, Gen. 21. 4.  
 Mothers must nurse their owne children  
 if they bee able. 1. Tim. 5. 16. Gen. 21. 7.  
 1 Sam. 1. 22. Both must bring them up in  
 instruction and teare of the Lord. Eph. 6.  
 4. Deut. 6. 6. 7. 20. Exod. 12. 26. keepe  
 them in subiection, traine them up in  
 some honest labour and calling, Gen. 4.  
 1. 2. lovingly, and seasonably correct  
 their faults, not without compassion and  
 sorrow

sorrow, Proverbs, 23. 13. and 19. 18. and 22. 15. and 29. 15. 17. Eph. 6. 3. bestow them fitly in marriage, and that in due time, 1 Cor. 7. 36. 38. Ieremie 29. 6. and lay up some thing for them as ability will suffer, 2, Corinth. 12. 14. Prov. 19. 14. Masters must chuse into their houses true, and religious servants; and when they are entertained take care to informe them privately, and see that they serve God in publick also. Psalme 101. 6. Acts 10. 2. Iosh. 24. 15. Gene. 18. 19. Exodus 20. 10. provide and give them fit meate, lodging, wages, worke, time of refreshing, Prov. 27. 27. 1 Cor. 9. 9. Deut 24. 14. 15. Prov. 31. 15. take care of them when they bee sick, that they perish not for want of good attendance, Matth. 8. 6. and admonish, rebuke, correct them, if need require. Prov. 29. 19. Ephesians 6. 9. Col. 4. 1. Strong Christians must beare with the infirmities of the weak, seeking to build them forward, using their liberty aright, for edification, and not for offence, forbearing even things lawfull for the good of their neighbour, Romans 15. 1. 2. and 14. 13. 15. &c. 1 Cor. 8. 3. Old men should be examples of patience,  
O sobriety,

sobrietic, and holinesse, sound in faith, able to give good counsell and direction, Tit. 2. 2. 3. 4. Such as excell in gifts must not despise others; but imploy their graces for the good of them.

*Q. What is the duty of equals?*

*An.* Equals must regard the dignity and worth of each other, modestly carry themselves one towards another, and in giving honour goe one befoze another, Eph. 5. 21. Rom. 12. 10.

*Q. What is the sixth Commandement?*

*A.* Thou shalt do no Murther.

*Q. What is the generall duty of this Commandement?*

*A.* That by all meanes lawfull we desire and study to preserve our <sup>1<sup>o</sup></sup> owne person, and the <sup>2<sup>o</sup></sup> person of our Neighbour.

*Expos.* 19. The speciall duties of this Commandement in respect of our selves, are, love and care to preserve the vigor of mind, and strength of body, that they may be serviceable to the Lord, and fit for our brothers good; Ephes. 5. 29. to which end wee must use cheerefulnesse, Proverb. 17. 22. sobrietic in care, meate, drinke, apparell, recreation, and use of physick,

Physick, Matthew 6.34. pro. 25. 26. and 23. 2. as also moderation in labours Ecclesiasti. 4. 8. and sleepe; seeking lawfull meanes of refuge from violence and danger as giving soft words, courteous answers, Iudg. 8. 2 3. Prov. 15. 1. flying and shunning the company of angry persons, Prov. 22.24. 26. using the benefit of law, Deuter. 17. 8. &c. and weapons for our necessary defence, &c.

20. The speciall duties in respect of our neighbour are, love, Rom. 13. 8. reioycing at the good of their persons, 1 Cor. 12. 25. 26. Rom. 13. 15. compassion and tendernesse of heart towards them, Eph. 4. 31. 32. patience, bearing wrongs, forgiving iniuries, Col. 3. 12. 13. passing by some wants in mens words or actions, Eccles. 7. 2. 1. prov. 17. 9. covering them with silence, taking all things in the best sence, 1 Cor. 13. 5. 7. courteous behaviour, Eph. 4. 32. easinesse to be entreated, Iam. 3. 17. gentle answers, prov. 1. 5. hearing our inferiours speake in their iust defence, Iob 31. 13. avoyding all occasions of strife, parting with our owne right sometimes for peace sake, Gen. 13. 8, 9. not neglecting any duty of

love and friendship, though we bee forced to goe to law for our right. Rom. 12. 18. Releeving the needy, visiting the sick, cloathing the naked, lodging the stranger, &c. Heb. 13. 2, 3. Iob 31. 19, 20. pleading for the life and person of the poore, and such as be wronged, and delivering them also, if it stand in our power Pro. 24. 11. 12. using milde in rebukes, and moderation in correction, Gal. 6. 1. yet according to the qualitie of the offence, Iude v. 22. 23. And in a word be harmelesse and innocent towards all men. Psal. 15. 3. taking care that they sustaine no harme by us or ours, Exod. 21. 8. in their persons in taunt, Match 5. 22. stripe, or ill handling. Levit. 24. 19. To our own and our neighbours cattell we must also shew mercy, Prov. 12. 10.

*Q* Which is the generall sinne here forbidden?

An. All neglect of our <sup>21</sup> owne, or our neighbours <sup>22</sup> preservation, or desire of our owne or their hurt, conceived in heart, or declared by word, gesture, or deed.

*Expos* 21. In respect of our selves by this Commandement is forbidden excessive

cessive sorrow, Prov. 17. 22. distracting care, thoughts against our selves, solitarie musing on the temptation of Sathan; neglect of meat, drink, apparell, recreation, physick, sleepe, labour, &c. or excessive therein: meddling with other mens matters, Amos 4. 1. Pro. 23. 21. and 26. 17 desperate adventures, companying with them that bee make-bates, quarrellous, and furious, &c. Prov. 26 20 21. doing that whereby wee are or may be stirred up to anger, and refusing to crave the ayd of the Magistrate.

22. In respect of our neighbour, here is forbidden hatred. 1 Iohn. 3. 15. envy Prov. 14. 29. unadvised anger, Matth. 5. 22. pride, Pro. 13. 10. desire of revenge; foolish pittie, reproching for sine or any other infirmitie, as poverty, basenesse of blood, stammering. Levit. 10. 14. &c. chidings, brawlings, crying with an unseemely lifting of the voyce, Eph. 4. 31. complaints to every one of the injurie wee have received. Disdainfull or scornfull carriage, as dejectednesse of countenance, Genes. 4. 5. nodding the head, pointing with the finger, or using any other provoking gesture. Prov. 6. 17.

Stubbornesse, implacablenesse, Rom. 1  
31. breaking iests upon our neighbour  
Oppression. Levit. 19. 13. with-drawing  
corne from the poore, Prov. 11. 26. de-  
taining the hirelings wages, Levit. 19. 13.  
Ier. 22. 13. not restoring the pledge, Ex-  
odus 22. 26. Quarrelling, Tit. 3. 2. stri-  
king wounding, Exod. 21. 18. 22. 26.  
placing manhood in revenge or bloudshed,  
Prov. 20. 22. extremitie of punishment,  
Deut. 25. 2. all taking away of life, other-  
wise than in case of publique iustice, iust  
warre, and necessary defence, Ex. 21. 12.  
Gen. 9. 6. and all sparing those the Lord  
commandeth to be punished. Proverbs  
17. 15.

*Q. What is the seventh Commande-  
ment?*

*An. Thou shalt not commit adul-  
tery.*

*Q. What is the generall duty of this  
commandement?*

*A. That we should<sup>23</sup> keepe our selves  
pure in soule and body, both towards our  
selves and others.*

*Expos. 23. The speciall duties of this  
Commandement are puritie of heart, 1.  
Thes. 4. 3. 4. speeche favouering of sobrie-  
tie,*

ty, Col. 4. 6. temperance in sleep, recreation, dyet both for quantity and quality, Luk. 21. 34. 1 Thes. 5. 6. convenient abstinence, watching and fasting, modesty in apparell, 1. Tim. 2. 9. gravity in behaviour, Tit. 2. 3. making a covenant with our sight, hearing, and other senses, Job 31. 1. Psal. 119. 37. possessing our vessels in holinesse and honour, 1 Thes. 4. 5. finally, in such as have not the gift of continency, holy mariage with such as be fit, 1. Cor. 7. 2. 9. 39. and therein due Benevolence, fidelity, and confidence each to other, 1. Cor. 7. 5.

*What is the generall sinne here forbidden?*

*An.* All uncleannes of heart, speech, gesture, or action, together with all the causes, occasions, and signes thereof.

*Expos.* 24. The speciall sins forbidden in this Commandement are filthy imaginations and lusts, Col. 3. 5. speaking or giving eare to rotten and corrupt communication, Eph. 5. 3. 4. 1 Cor. 15. 33. wantonnesse of the eyes, Matth. 5. 28. giving them libertie to wander, and to rove about, 2. Samuel 11. 2. Idlenesse, Ezek. 16. 49. intemperance in sleep or diet. Ier.

5. 8. excessive. Eph. 5. 18. new-fanglednesse, Zeph. 1. 8. immodesty in apparell, Esa. 3. 16. &c. wearing that which agreeth not to our sex. Deuter. 22. 5. lascivious pictures. 1 Thes. 5. 22. impudency or lightnesse in countenance or behaviour. Prov. 7. 13. painting the face, 2 Kings 29. 30. unnecessary companyings with lewd persons, Proverbs 5. 8. promiscuous dancing of men and women, Matth. 6. 22. fornication. Deut. 22. 28. adulterie, Deut. 22: 32. incest, Lev. 18. 6. abhorring marriage, or unlawfull entrance into the same, when the parties are within the degrees of affinitie prohibited, Lev. 18. 6. formerly contracted, Deut. 22. 23. or married to some other who are yet alive, Rom. 7. 2. unseasonable or untemperate abuse of marriage bed. Leviticus 18. 19. Heb. 13. 4. and also all unnaturall lusts, Lev, 11. 22. 23. Rom. 1. 26. 27.

*Q. What is the eighth Commandement?*

*A. Thou shalt not steale.*

*Q. What is the generall duty of this Commandement?*

*An. That by all good meanes we further the outward<sup>s</sup> estate of our selves, and of our neighbours.*

*Expos.*

Expose. 25. The speciall duties of this Commandement are an honest calling  
1. Cor. 7. 30. Gen. 4. 2. faithfull labouring, Eph. 4. 28. true and honest dealing therein, psal. 15. 2. frugality, honestly keeping what wee have gotten, wisely ordering our expences, and conveniently using what God hath given, that we may be helpfull to others; Prov. 21. 20. contentation with our estate, be we never so poore, 1. Tim. 6. 6. 7. 8. borrowing for neede, and good ends, what wee are able to repay, and making payment with thanks and cheerefulness, Exod. 22. 14. 15. at time appointed; psal. 15. 4. or if we cannot keepe day, then by all other meanes contenting the creditour. Giving freely, Luke 6. 30. justly, Esa. 38. 7. and cheerefully, 2. Cor. 9. 7. according to our ability, and our neighbours necessitie, 2 Cor. 8. 13. lending freely, not requiring our owne before the day appoynted, not compounding for gaine; forbearing or forgiving the whole, or part of the summe lent, if it cannot bee payd without the hazard of undoing the borrower, Luke 6. 35. using truth, faithfulness, iustice, and indifferencie in buying, selling, letting, hiring,  
part

partnership, &c. Mat. 17. 2. & Theff. 4. 6. not concealing the faults of our wares, or other commodity, or taking advantage of the necessity or unskilfulnesse of the one party, but equally respecting the good of each other, Gal. 5. 13. seasonable and faithfull restoring of things committed to our trust, Exod. 22. 7. 8. of things found; Deut. 22. 2. 3. and of things unlawfully gotten, Levit. 6. 2. &c. Good advisednesse in undertaking suretiship, in matters not above our ability, and for such as are knowne and approved Christians, Prov. 11. 15. and 7. 18. moderation in recovering that which is our owne, Phil. 4. 5. Ministers that receive the tithes must feed the flock committed to their charge, Ezech. 34. 2. Lawyers must take no cause into their hands, which they see can have no good end with equitie. Esa. 5. 20. psa. 15. 5. and they must follow those which they undertake to defend, with all honest diligence and faithfulnessse; for love of equity, and not of gaine, ending sutes with all possible dispatch and good expedition, Exod. 18. 13. &c.

*Q. What is the generall sinne here forbidden?*

An.

A. All<sup>26</sup> neglect to further our owne,  
or our<sup>27</sup> neighbours wealth, all impeach-  
ment or hinderance thereof, and all en-  
crease thereof by uniuert and inuert  
dealing,

*Expos.* 26. Actuell finnes of commissi-  
on, here forbidden are, idlenesse, inordi-  
nate walking, Pro. 12. 11. 2 Thes. 3. 11. co-  
uetousnesse, 1. Tim. 6. 10. miserable pinch-  
ing, and defrauding our selves of the good  
things, which God hath given us, Eccles.  
6. 1. &c. and 2. 26. wastefull consuming  
of our substance by lavish spending in  
meate, drinke, apparell, buildings unne-  
cessary gifts, sports, &c. Prov. 21. 17.  
Eph. 5. 18. and by unadvised suretiship,  
Prov. 23. 13.

27. In respect of our neighbour,  
grutching at the prosperitie of others,  
borrowing to maintaine idlenesse, defraud  
men of their right, what we are not able  
to repay; Ezek. 18. 7. also borrowing  
upon interest unlesse it be in case of ne-  
cessitie; denying what we have borrow-  
ed, or repaying unwillingly, Psal. 37. 21.  
Levit. 19. 13. lending upon usurie, Exod.  
22. 25. exacting increase meerely for  
the loane. Ezek. 18. 8. cruelly requiring  
all

all a mans debts. Esa. 58. 3. without mer-  
 cie or compassion. In bargaining, buy-  
 ing, selling, letting, hiring, partnership  
 to use injustice, craft, fraud, or false-  
 hood: 1 Thesse 4. 6. as making things li-  
 tigious and doubtfull, respecting a mans  
 owne commodity onely; parting with  
 bad wares for good, Amos 8. 5. or good  
 at an excessive rate, enhaussing the just  
 price meereley because wee sell for day;  
 ingrossing wares into our owne hands,  
 that we may sell them at our owne plea-  
 sure; dispraying what wee are to buy,  
 Prov. 20. 14. or praying what we are to  
 sell without just cause and for our meere  
 advantage: buying underfoote, especi-  
 ally of such who sell for need; abusing  
 mens simplicity and unskilfulnesse; using  
 false weights, ballances, measures, and  
 lights to deceive; Levit. 19. 35 Prov. 11.  
 1. selling things hurtfull, and not vendi-  
 ble; as dispensations for sinne, charmes,  
 church livings. Prov. 20. 25. Mal. 3. 8. cru-  
 cifixes, &c. Detayning things strayed,  
 found, Exod. 23. 4. Deut. 22. 1. 2. 3. or the  
 meanes of our neighbours living layed  
 to pledge. Exod. 22. 26. 27. as also things  
 committed to our trust and custodie,  
 Deut.

Deutorono. 27. 19. Prolonging of suites, detending bad causes, immoderate, or uncivill contending at Law for our owne right, selling Justice. Proverbs 15. 27. removing ancient bounds. Deutoronomie 19. 14. robbery by land, or sea, Zach. 5. 3. 4. 5. whether it be stealing goods, cattell, Exod. 22. 1. servants or children, Exod. 21. 16. Deut. 24. 7. with or without colour of law: receiving of things stolen. Prov. 29. 24. Psal. 50. 18. 19. 22. And all unapproved and unprofitable trades of life or callings (if they may be so termed) as jesters, jugglers, parasite, carders, dicers, gamesters players, fortune-tellers, figure-casters, sturdy rogues, and such as be makers of the proper instruments of unlawfull games, Jer. 10. 2. Job 30. 1, 2, 3. 2 Thes. 3. 10. Act. 19. 19.

*Q. Which is the ninth commandment?*

*A* Thou shalt not beare false witness against thy neighbour.

*Q. What is the generall duty here required?*

*An.* That by all meanes we seek to maintaine our <sup>28</sup> owne and our <sup>29</sup> neighbours good name, according to truth and a good conscience,

*Expos.*

*Expos.* 28. The speciall duties of this Commandement are, to speake sparingly, Prov. 10. 19. and to speake the truth from the heart, psal. 15. 2. In respect of our selves, rightly to know and iudge of our selves, Gal. 5. 26. 2 Cor. 13. 5. to procure our owne good name, Prov. 22. 1. by seeking Gods glory first and principally, Matth. 6. 33. Heb. 11. 2. 39. iudging and speaking well of others, Matth. 7. 2. and walking unblameably, Eccles. 10. 8. Luk. 1. 6. Iob 1. 1. to defend it also when need requireth, but modestly, and in a sort unwillingly.

29. In respect of our Neighbour wee are commanded to desire and reioyce in his good name, Rom. 11. 8. Gal. 1. 23. 24. sorrow for his infirmities, psal. 119. 136. Ezra. 9. 6. and cover them in love, proverb. 17. 9. 1 Pet. 4. 8. hoping the best with patience, and so iudging, 1 Cor. 13. 5. 6. 7. not bewraying his secrets before we have admonished him, Prov. 11. 12. 13. and 25. 9. 10 yea, though we do it with griefe, and to such as wee desire might helpe and redresse them; rebuking him to his face, Matth. 18. 16. Gal. 2. 11. when iust occasion requireth, but yet lovingly

lovingly and meekeely, Gal. 6. 1. prov. 25.  
12. with remembrance of what is prayse-  
worthy in him, 1 Cor. 1. 4. 10. Rev. 2. 2.  
3. 4. commending him where hee deser-  
veth well, yet rather in his absence than  
presence, 1. Thesse. 5. 22. defending the  
good name of him, whose unblameable  
carriage is knowne unto us by testimony,  
hand-writing, and oath, if need require,  
Phil. 10. 1. &c. not receiving idle, or false  
reports against our brother, psal. 15. 3.  
Prov. 25. 23. and 26. 20.

*Q. What is the generall sinne forbidden?*

An. All failing to procure, defend, and  
further our <sup>3<sup>o</sup></sup> owne, and <sup>1<sup>o</sup></sup> our neigh-  
bours credit: all uniuert defence, wzeng-  
full suspition, or accusation of our selves  
or others.

*Expos. 3c.* Here is forbidden an over  
or underweening of the good things in  
our selves, Luke 18. 9. 10. 11. Exod. 4. 10.  
13. Iere. 1. 7. bearing our selves above  
our worth, Phil. 2. 3. boasting. Prov. 27.  
1. excusing our selves uniuertly, 1. Samuel  
15. 15. Gen. 3. 12. debasing our selves,  
dissembling that others may prayse us,  
procuring our selves an ill name by wal-  
king undiscreetly or offensively, 2. Sam.

12. 14. Rom. 2. 23. 24. and a needlesse lessening the good opinion others have of us, by bewraying our weaknesse; as want of learning, &c. to the carper.

*Expos.* 31. Here is condemned evill suspicions, Matthew 7. 1. 1 Samuel 1. 13. want of desire, care and rejoycing in our neighbours good name, 1 Pet. 2. 1. rejoycing in his infirmitie, contempt, or foolish admiration of others, Acts 12. 22. Prov. 27. 14. unjustly renewing the memory of our neighbours crimes, which were in tract of time forgotten. Prov. 17. 9. calling good evill, or evill good. Esa. 5. 20. flattery, Prov. 27. 14. Job 17. 5. forbearing to speak in the cause or credit of our neighbours, Prov. 24. 18. 12. and 31. 8. 9. rash censuring, Math. 7. 1. 2. nodding the head, winking with the eye, pointing with the finger, or any other vilifying or deriding gestures, Matthew 5. 23. speaking the truth with desire of our neighbours discredit, 1. Sam. 22. 14. 15. with Psalme 15. 1, 2, 3. listening to tale-bearers, Proverbs 25. 23. raising false reports, Leviticus 19. 16. relating mens words to their disgrace, contrary to their meaning, 1 Samuel 21. 9. 10. Math.

26. 90. 61. Spreading abroad flyingtales, prov. 26. 20, 21, 22. libels, false presentments and citations, giving false evidence, and pronouncing false sentence, Levit. 19. 15. 35. Exod. 23. 6. Deut. 19. 16. Prov. 19. 5. In respect of our selves and our neighbours, here is forbidden lying and equivocating. Ephes. 4. 25. Col. 3. 9, 10.

*Q. What is the tenth commandment?*

*An. Thou shalt not covet, &c.*

*Q. What is the generall duty here commanded?*

*An. That wee bee truly<sup>32</sup> contented with our owne outward condition, and heartily desire the good & of our neighbour, in all things belonging unto him, great and small; & 1 Tim. 6. 8. 1 Cor. 7: 29. 30. Acts 26. 29.*

*Expos. 32.* In this commandment we are enjoyned to acquaint our selves with thoughts of good towards our neighbour, Esay 32. 8. 3. Iohn 2. Iob 31. 29. and that which appertaineth to him; to rejoyce in the present good estate of our selves and our neighbours, psalme 34. 2. and 119. 74. and cheerefully to praise God for it.

P

*Q. What*

*Q. What is the generall sinne forbidden?*

*An.* All thoughts of mind, wishes, and desires of heart, and delightfull remembrances of evill againſt contentedneſſe. Iob 31. 29.

*Q. Is any man able to keepethis Law ?*

*A.* Not perfectly: for the a godly often fall, the moſt holy <sup>33</sup> faile <sup>b 34</sup> alwaies in their beſt actions: but the child of God ought c, may and uſually doth d walke according to the Law ſincerely. a Iam. 3. 2. b Exod. 28. 36, 37, 38. c 1 Ioh. 2. 14. Iohn 14. 15. 23. d 1 King. 15. 5.

*Expof.* 33. In the ſervants of Chriſt there remaines ſome root of bitterneſſe, Heb. 12. 1. Rom. 7. 23. the fleſh luſteth againſt the ſpirit, Gal. 5. 17. their knowledge is but in part, 1 Cor. 13. 12. Pſal. 119. 18. their obedience therefore cannot bee perfect. Iof. 9. 14, 15. 2 Sam. 2. 9. 2 Chron 35. 22. Luke 20.

34. Often in the matter, and manner of doing, Iofh. 14. 15. continually in the meature of duty, the moſt holy do offend. Mich. 13. 22.

*Q. Should not a Chriſtian omit doing of good altogether, ſeeing hee cannot doe it in that meature that God requireth ?*

*An.*

*with an Exposition upon the same.* 213

An. <sup>30</sup> but <sup>35</sup> with e diligence and singleness of heart strike against corruption, looke f for the assistance of Gods spirit, and labour to g grow in grace. e 2 Cor. 7. 1. f 2 Chron. 16. 9. Philip. 4. 13. g 1 Pet. 2. 2. and 2 Pet. 3. 18.

*Expos.* 35. The sinne which cleaving to the work defiles it, is by all meanes possible to be avoyded. Matth. 6. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. Psal. 37. 27. but the worke it selfe is not to bee forborne. For wee have an absolute charge from God, to exercise our selves in all good workes, Esa. 1. 17. 1 Pet. 3. 11. Col. 1. 10. 2 Pet. 1. 5, and a mercifull promise, that he will forgive the infirmities, which our corruption doth fasten upon them, and favourably accept our sincere endeavour to walke in all holy obedience, though now and then wee through weaknesse do step awry. Job 42. 7. 2 Chro. 30. 19, 20. Esa. 40. 11. Can. 2. 14. Numb. 23. 21. Ezek. 34. 16.

*Q. What meanes should a man use to grow in Grace?*

A. We must thoroughly examine <sup>36</sup> his h waies, <sup>37</sup> iudge i himselfe, watch <sup>38</sup> ober his heart at all times, in all places, occasions, and conditions: k redeeming the <sup>39</sup>

time to store his <sup>40</sup> heart with good, and  
 preserve <sup>1</sup> his <sup>41</sup> faith, *b* Hag. 1. 5. 7.  
<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 11. 31. *k* 2 Tim. 4. 5. Eph. 5. 16.  
 / Heb. 10. 35, 36. 38.

*Expos.* 36. Examination, which is a di-  
 ligent, exquisite, and unpartiall search of  
 our hearts, thoughts, and waies, Lam. 3.  
 40. by the word of God, Rom. 7. 7. as in  
 his presence, is a speciall meanes to pre-  
 serve from pride, security, hardnesse of  
 heart, and falling into sinne. Heb. 3. 13.  
 psal. 4. 4. It doth quicken to prayer, Gen:  
 24. 63. psal. 119. 12. is a good steppes to re-  
 pentance, ps. 119. 59. Hag. 1. 5, setleth in  
 a Christian course, Psal: 39. 1. provokes  
 forward in godlinesse, ps. 119. 56. 60. and  
 makes charitable towards others, Gal.  
 6. 4.

37. To judge a mans selfe, is to passe an  
 unpartiall sentence against himselfe, agree-  
 able to the word of God, according to the  
 measure of that iniquity which by exami-  
 nation he findeth in himselfe, Eze. 16. 61.  
 and 60. 43. Dan. 9. 8. Luk. 15. 18, 19. this a-  
 wakeneth the heart, Eze. 36. 3. maketh us  
 affraid of sin, Gen. 32. 9. spurreth us to sue  
 to the throne of grace, 1 King. 8. 83. and  
 preventeth the judgement of God, 1 Cor.  
 11. 31. 38.

38. Watchfulnesse, which is a narrow, carefull, and continuall keeping, observing, and over-seeing of our hearts, and all our waies, Prov. 4. 23. is both exceeding necessary, seeing that of our selves we are apt to erre, Psal. 59. 10. and have many occasions besides to draw us away from godlinesse. Luke 14. 18. 20. and exceeding profitable to prevent or withstand Satan. 1 Pet. 5. 8. Mar. 26. 41. keepe under lusts, avoyd and cut off strayings, and wandrings of mind and life; 2 Tim. 4. 5. 1 Cor. 16. 13. Psal. 101. 2. keepe the heart in good order, and to eschew dangerous decayes, fals and discomforts, which otherwise men shall runne into. 2 Sam. 11. 2. 1 Tim. 2. 14. 2 Cor. 11. 3.

39. To redeeme time is so to husband it, that every moment thereof may bee spent for our best advantage, Ephes. 5. 16. Col. 4. 5. Time is a precious thing, being lost, it is unrecoverable, though God may pardon it to the penitent: Esay 1. 16. 18. therefore wee must redeeme the time of youth, Eccl. 12. 1. of the Gospel, 2 Cor. 6. 2. the Sabbath, Exod. 20. 10. the time of sicknesse, health, and vacancie from businesse in our calling, &c. Luke

12.42 John 9.4. Gal. 6.10. Prov. 10.5.

40. When mans heart is emptied of evil, it will quickly gather filth againe (as garments will dust,) unlesse it be fraught with good. Matt. 12 43,44 45.

41. If faith decay in us, (as needes it must, unlesse it be carefully stirred up, preserved and exercised, 2 Tim. 1. 6,) godlinesse must needs wither, 1 Tim. 1. 5. for faith is the victory whereby wee overcome the world, 1 Iohn 5.4. thereby wee wrestle against sinne, by the Almighty power of Iesus Christ; Gal. 2.20. and our lives must needs bee full of doubtings, or security, drowned with carnall delights, 1 King. 11.4 and sinfull pleasures; and the word will lose its efficacie, Heb. 4.2. the exercises of religion their sweetnesse. To the end that faith might be preserved, wee must value it above gold & silver, 2 Pet. 2. 1. often meditate upon the sweetnesse, Psal. 119. 103. and 139. 17. constancie, Revel. 1. 5. 2 Cor. 1. 20. and perpetuity of the most precious and free promises, which are the grounds of faith, Hosea 14.5. Ezech. 36. 22. walke according to the rules thereof, learne to exercise it, living thereby, Heb. 10.38. Rom. 1.17. and  
sincere

sincerely, constantly, and conscionably use all those meanes, whereby faith is wrought or nourished.

*Q. How else?*

*A.* He must take m unto him the whole armour <sup>42</sup> of God, and with <sup>n</sup> care, uprightness, & constancy, use the meanes of grace befoze prescribed in one o estate as well as another. *m* Ephes. 6. 13, 14. *n* Prov. 2. 3, 4, 5. Colloss. 4. 2. *o* Job 27. 10.

*Expos. 42.* All Christians are called to be souldiers, Rev. 12. 7. to fight under Christ Iesus their Captaine, against the flesh. Rom. 8. 13. the world, 1 Ioh. 2. 16. and the devill, 1 Pet. 5. 8, 9. a spirituall, subtill, and malicious enemie. Eph. 6. 12. Re. 20. 2. Matth. 13. 28, 29. that can never be appeased: they had need therefore take unto them the whole armour of God, which they must daily put on, and continually keep on, that at all times they have it ready for use, to repe'l and quench the fierie darts of the devill. The parts of this armour are sincerity, love or righteousnesse, the Gospel, Faith, lively hope, and the word of God, Eph. 6. 14. 15, 16, 17, 18. These are kept on by earnest prayer,

watchfulnesse, and holy meditation.

2. What priviledges doth God afford unto his children in this life, who labour according to his will to grow in grace?

An. They may be assured of his favour and fatherly care over them, the direction of his spirit, their growth in grace and perseverance to the end. *g* 1 Ioh. 3. 14. Iohn 1. 12. & 1 Tim. 4. 10. Mat. 10. 30. *f* Psal. 143. 10. & Col. 1. 9. 10. & Phil. 1. 6.

*Expos.* 1. It is first of all to be observed that none of these priviledges can be enjoyed without great strife and labour. 1 Cor. 16. 13.

2. Not onely some uncertaine hope, or dimme sight of Gods favour, but assurance thereof may in this life be obtained, Job 19. 25. 2 Cor. 5. 1. 2 Tim. 4. 8. and 1. 12. for the Scripture exhorts us to make our calling and election sure. 2 Pet. 1. 10. layeth many sufficient grounds of assurance; 1 Iohn 4. 13. & 3. 14. Phil. 1. 6. and proposeth divers examples of them who have attained thereunto, Rom. 8. 34. 38. 39. Luk. 2. 29. Heb. 11. 9, 10. This is a rare and precious priviledge, because it may constantly be enjoyed with an increase

crease thereof, Hos. 13. 14. Malac. 3. 6.  
1 Thes. 4. 1. 10. is alwaies accompanied  
with joy unspeakable, and sweet content-  
ment, Cant. 1. 1. Psal. 4. 6, 7. Ioh. 8. 56.  
1 Pet. 1. 8. and the longer it is possessed,  
the sweeter it is; daintie meats may be-  
come loathsome, but wee cannot surfet of  
Gods favour. Psal. 17. 15.

3. God would have his children know,  
that in every state he will save and uphold  
them. Pl. 9. 10. & 32. 6, 7. even when his  
wrath doth burne against his enemies; Es.  
33. 4, 5, 6. and 27. 7, 8. he will teach them  
the good way, which they ought to fol-  
low, Pl. 25. 12. 14. Prov. 3. 31. give his An-  
gels charge over them, carry them in his  
bosome Esa. 91. 11, 12, &c. The amiable,  
sweet, and comfortable titles, that Christ  
giveth to his Spouse, calling her my love,  
my dove, my sister, my Spouse, my undefi-  
led, doth shew what great regard he hath  
of every Christian, Can. 1. 8, 9. and 2. 4.  
Deut. 33. 12. 27, 28, 29. Can. 7. 6.

4. The servants of Christ are exhorted,  
and commanded to grow in grace and  
godlinesse. 1 Thes. 4. 1. 10. Col. 1. 10.  
there are patternes of holy men left unto  
us in Scriptures, that have growne rich  
in

in wisdom and holiness. Reve. 2. 19. what God commandeth in the Gospel, that Christians should believe he will enable them to do, Iohn 6. 63. & Iohn 5. 3. and what ordinary graces any of the faithful did obtaine, the same may all the faithful look for, Zach. 12. 10. Eph. 4. 4. 2 Pet. 1. 1. if it be for their good, Rom. 8. 28. for they are all under the same covenant, have the same Redeemer and Sanctifier, and have the same promises made unto them, 2 Cor. 6. 18. 1 Tim. 2. 5, 6. Ephes. 4. 30. and 2. 12.

*Q. What other priviledges doth God afford unto them?*

*An.* They are kept w<sup>th</sup> from, comforted in, and delivered out of many troubles, taught to use all estates aright, preserved from foule offences, enabled to arise againe, if they be fall, instructed to live godly, and have possession of the word, w<sup>th</sup> Psal. 32. 10. Acts 16. 25. x Prov. 11. 8. y Lam. 3. 27. Phil. 4. 12. z Luk. 1. 6. a Psal. 27. 23, 24. b Eph. 2. 10. c Luke 8. 15.

*Expos. 5.* The godly shunne the sins which others follow with greedinesse, Gen. 39. 9. & 42. 18. Neh. 5. 15. Iob 31. 1.  
order

order their affaires with godly wisdome, Acts 23. 6. and 22. 26. and 18. 11. with 19. 37. and foresee the evill to come, and hide themselves, Prov. 22. 3. and 26. 12. therefore they are preserved from many troubles that others fall into. And yet for want of care and watchfulnesse, they often draw no smal grieffe upon their heads, from which they might bee free, if they would carefully subdue their passions, and look unto their waies. Can. 5. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. 2 Sam. 11. 2, 3. Psal. 5. 1, 8.

6 In prosperity the godly are taught to edifie themselves, Act. 9. 31. to walke in meeknes, lowlines, feare and comfort of the Lord, doing good, Iob 14. 15. 21. 24. In adversity, to bee humble, patient, pray, 1 Pet. 5. 6. Iob 1. 21. Psalme 39. 9. and 30. 7. 8. grow out of love with this world, 2 Cor. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4. prize the Lords favour. Psal. 73. 26. 28. cleave close unto God. Isa. 10. 20. examine their hearts, and reforme their waies, Lam. 3. 40. Zeph. 2. 1. Esa. 27. 9. In their callings to take triall of their wisdome, faith, sincerity, love of righteousnes, and patience, and so to go about the same with hearts affecting the things that be above. Psal. 112. 5. Gen. 31. 38.

38,39,40. Gal. 5.22. Gen. 17.1,2. Zach. 8.16. Luk. 21.19.

7. If the godly be overtaken with some reproachfull evill, Gen. 9.21. and 10. 33. it is not ordinary, Rom. 8. 1, 2 Cor. 5. 7. but for a time. Psal. 37.34. when they have cast off their armour, and neglect their watch. 2 Sam. 11. 1.2. Mat. 29.40.41. the Lord suffering them to fall, to let them see their weaknesse, correct their carelesnesse, cure in them pride of heart, and contempt of others: and ordering their slips for the glory of his great name, the comfort of the weake, and the good of the party fallen, after that by repentance he is risen againe.

8. The righteous may fall, but the Lord will not suffer them to perish, Iohn 10.28. Christ hath prayed for them, Iohn 17.20. Luke 22. 23. the immortall seede abideth in them, 1 Iohn 3. 9. the spirit of God doth quicken them. Rom. 8.2.11. so that afterward they take heart and courage againe to fight against sinne and Satan, therefore they can never bee utterly vanquished, though for a time they bee throwne downe. 2 Cor. 4.8,9. Mat. 16.18.

9. If the faithfull seeke unto the Lord,  
hee

hee will teach them with delight and comfort to live godly in all places, and callings, Prov. 2. 3, 4. 9. Esa. 30. 21. but yet they shall find the flesh rebelling against the Spirit, Gal. 5. 17. Ps. 42. 5. 11. that they might not trust to themselves, but in the Lord, Pro. 3. 5, 6. no longer live than find need to pray, Lord strengthen me, 1 Thess. 5. 17. bee thankfull to God for the mercies they have received, Psal. 54. 6, 7. not triumph before the victory nor walke in security, as though they had no enemy; 1 Pet. 5. 8, 9. and that by how much the fight is more painfull, sharp, and difficult, by so much the victorie should be the more delightfull, sweet, and glorious, Rom. 16. 20. Rev. 12. 11.

10. The word of God is possessed, when it is received truly in our heads, is kept and laid up safely, as a treasure in our minds and hearts, so that wee have it in readinesse for our direction and comfort, and doth rule over us with an holy and universall soveraigntie. Luke 2. 51. Col. 3. 16, 17. Psalmc 119. 111, 112. 33. 35.

*Q. Doe all the Godly, or any at all times enjoy all these priviledges?*

*An.*

A. No: some are ignorant of them, not believing, or at least faintly believing that there are such; others are carelesse, who prize not, and so take not paines for these things as they ought.

*Q. What other hindrances doe deprive Christians of these priviledges?*

An. d Inordinate passions, as feare, anger, selfe love, pride, love of pleasure, cares of the world, and earthly incumbrances; and inconstancy in good duties: temptations also to distrust doe keepe under many. d Iam. 4. 1, 2, 3.

*Q. How should a man bridle and reforme these unruly passions?*

A. Let him highly esteeme a Christian life, pray earnestly, set himselfe most against the corruptions that be strongest in him, shun the occasions of sinne, hide the commandement in his heart, and apply the death of Christ for the killing of corruption, e Psal. 119. 51. f 1 John 5. 4.

*Q. How may a man overcome his temptations to distrust.*

A. He must not give credit to Satans suggestions against Gods truth: but consider of Gods h<sup>is</sup> power, i goodnes, k un-  
chang-

changablenesse, former mercies, and free<sup>m</sup> grace in giving us his sonne<sup>12</sup>, so that weaknes, unworthinesse, want of feeling comfort should not dismay him. g Matth. 4. 3, 4. h Matth. 8. 2. Esa. 40. 21. i Psal. 51. 12. k Ier. 31. 3. l Psal. 77. 11. m Rom. 5. 8, 9.

*Expos. 11.* God is in power all sufficient, so that he can helpe us, Eph. 3. 30. and in love everlasting. John 13. 1, 2 Thes. 2. 16. Ier. 13. 3. seeing then hee hath once loved us, we may be assured that hee will never leave us, Phil. 4. 19.

*Expos. 12.* God gives Christ to them that are lost in themselves. Esa. 16. 1, 2. Matth. 9. 12, 13. and the weake as well as the strong are partakers of his merits, 1 John 2. 1. strength of grace in us, and soundnes of a Christian conversation, is not the root of comfort; neither should weaknesse, and unworthinesse in us breed doubting of our salvation, Heb. 10. 22. The ground of all comfort is, that God of his free grace hath given his Sonne to us miserable sinners, even to as many as beleve in him, 1 John 2. 2, and 10. 3. 26. and the weake faith doth lay hold upon Christ as truly, though not so comfortably,

cably, as the strong doth, 1 Iohn 2. 12. 13.  
14.

*Q. What else must be done?*

*A.* Consider what promises the Lord hath made, to keepe and uphold us, what encouragements hee hath given us to beleve, <sup>13</sup> and how acceptable a thing it is p that we should so doe, *n* Matth. 16. 18. Luk. 22. 32. 18. *o* Iohn 3. 23. *p* Matt. 8. 10. and 15. 28. Rom. 4. 20.

*Expos.* 13. God commandeth, perswadeth, intreateth the thirsty and burdened to beleve, hath bound himselfe by covenant unto them. Esa. 43. 25. sealed it by the Sacrament, and confirmed the same by oath, Gen. 22. 16, 17. Psal. 105. 9. Luke 1. 73. And the deeper our miſericie is, the more wee glorifie his name by resting upon him for succour, Psal. 22. 1. Rom. 4. 18. 20.

*Q. What other things are to be learned for the overcoming of these temptation?*

*A.* Wee must iudge our selves *q* not by present <sup>14</sup> feeling, *o*2 by our own <sup>1</sup> discerning the fruits of grace, but by that which wee *f* have felt, and the fruits of grace which appeare to other, *q* Psalme 116. 11. Psalme. 13. 1. *r* psalme

§1. 10. <sup>f</sup> Ppsal. 77. 11. 12. 1 Cor. 10. 11.

*Expos.* 14. A man may have faith, that feels no comfort; and grace, that sees not the fruits of grace. Psalme 22. 1. and 77. 8. 9. The soule is sometimes sick, Ezek. 34. 4. 16. Cant. 3. 5. and sometimes in a swoond; Cant. 5. 6. sometimes wee judge amisse of our estate, Psal. 1. 16. 10. 11. and 77. 10. observing what motions wee have to evill, but not how we resist them: supposing wee have no grace, because wee have not what grace we desire, or because we find not our selves at all times alike affected, and comforted, or else wee want what others have, or we conceit them to have; whereas, God gives not all graces to one man, nor to all in the same measure; Ephes. 4. 7. Zach. 12. 8. Also it is the propertie of men in affliction, to admire small things in others, and denie great and many graces in themselves: likewise the vastnesse of desire causeth that which is much in comparison, to seeme nothing. Sathan workes upon the timorous disposition of some, and perswades them that they have fearefully consented to those suggestions, which they alwayes abhorred, and in

Q

which

which they never tooke delight: or that they wilfully offend, when some sinfull motions arise in their hearts; to which they doe not consent, but which they resist praying to God for forgivenessse and assistance: and because wee in temptations want one grace, which accompanies faith, to wit, ioy, Ioh. 8. 56. 1 Pet. 1. 8. we conclude that wee have no faith at all; whereas faith and ioy be not inseparable companions, Iob 13. 15. Heb. 11. 1. Psal. 77. 2, 3. the violence of temptation hindering the sense of mercy, when God doth withhold comfort. For which causes, wee must not overmuch trust our selves, or credit our feeling, but give credit to the testimony of the godly and faithfull.

*Q. What may be a further helpe beside?*

*A.* It is good to examine our hearts, and use the advice of others, but we must know withall, that groning after, & labouring to rest our wearied soules upon the promises of grace, being never satisfied untill our doubtfulnesse be removed, will bring a good end. vv Psal. 4. 4. 1 Thess. 5. 14. x Mat. 11. 28.

*Expos. 15. God with-holdeth or with-draweth*

draweth comfort sometimes by reason of some secret sinne, not yet repented of; or suffereth Sathan to buffet us that we might more seriously repent of some corruption. Job 40. 3, 4, 5, 6. with 42.6. 2 Cor. 12.7. And hereby the Lord doth correct our not prizing comfort at a high rate, Cant. 5. 3, 4, 5. our forgetfulnesse to prayse him for it: we ought therefore wisely to make tryall of our wayes, neither sparing any sinne, nor censuring that to bee sinne which is iust and lawfull; not making light account of any sinne, nor yet calling our repentance into question, because some things have beene amisse, or we have not attained to perfection.

*Q. Doe the fruits of the spirit alwayes appeare in the faithfull?*

*A. No: They are obscured in our first <sup>16</sup> conversion, in the dayes <sup>17</sup> of security when we leave our first love, <sup>18</sup> in time of <sup>b</sup> temptation <sup>19</sup> or some <sup>20</sup> relapse <sup>c</sup> into sinne. y Luke 5. 37, 38. <sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. 3. 1. <sup>a</sup> Rev. 2. 4. <sup>b</sup> Psal. 6, 1, 2, 3. <sup>c</sup> Psal. 51. 10.*

*Expos. 16.* At our first conversion wee are as new borne babes who have the truth of mans nature, but the perfection of it groweth with age, 1 Cor. 3. 1. Heb.

5. 13. Our knowledge is small and confused, Psal. 73. 22. and 119. 33. 34. 100. our sight of Gods love dimme, many doubts arise in our minds, Luke 24. 38. because of our weaknesse and unworthynesse: many lusts are untamed, we are unexperienced to put on, or weare the Christian armour: and therefore are oft foyled of our adversaries. Some few at their first conversion, abound in the fruits of the Spirit more sensibly, that they might be prepared for some future combates, wherein God will set them forth to bee examples, to the weake. If our comfort and ioy that we felt in our first conversion bee diminished, it is either by reason of securitie, or temptation. 1. Sam. 11. 2. 3. &c. with Psal. 51. 10. Psal. 77. 8. 9. 10.

17. Good ground will bring forth weeds if it bee not tilled, and fire will die if it bee not blowne; the graces of Gods Spirit will decay if they bee not stirred up by prayer, reading, &c. 1. Thess. 5. 19. 2 Tim. 1. 6. and lusts, worldlinesse, drowfinesse, &c. will creepe upon the best, and overgrow them; if they be not diligent to keepe them under

der, and roote them out, Luk. 21. 34.  
35. 36.

18. As our love to God doth decay, so the sense and feeling of Gods love to us doth die and decay also, Rev. 2. 4. 5. When our love to God is abated, the Spirit of God, which is the comforter of the heart, and the stirrer up of that ioy, which passeth all understanding, is grieved, Eph. 4. 30. our faith is weakned, 1. Tim. 1. 5. our prayers must needs be cold and faint, we must needs bee dull, heartlesse, uncheerefull, even a burden to our selves, untoward to any holy duty, Psal. 119. 174. For love is the wheel of the soule, and first affection, Deut. 6. 5. Matth. 22. 37. if that be disordered, no other can be of a right temper.

19. In time of temptation, the minde is full of disorder and confusion, and the heart of man, Exod. 6. 9. Psal. 77. 2. 7. 8. 9. 19. as the ayre is troubled in a tempestuous season; many mists being east betweene the eye of our understanding, and the promises of God, as clouds that obscure the Sunne: Satan having then leave to trie and buffet us. By temptations we are fitted to grow in grace, Psal. 32. 4. 5.

thereby also the graces of Gods spirit in us are tryed, Rom. 5. 5. Jam. 1. 2. 3. but it is no fit season for us to discern or judge of them.

20. When corruption getteth ground, grace must needs bee weakned, for these two are opposite the one to the other.

*Q. How should a man recover out of a relapse?*

*An.* By speedie & consideration<sup>21</sup> of what hee hath done, renewing his repentance with sorrow and shame, & bewailing his sin befoze God, refozming his life, and laying hold upon the promises of mercies, & Rev. 2. 5. & Jer. 31. 18. 19.

*Expos.* 21. Such as have fallen into some grosse sinne after repentance, must not utterly despaire, 1 Ioh. 3. 23. Esa. 55. 1. Matth. 11. 28. For the Prophets call upon wicked revoltors from God, to repent, and promise them pardon. Esa. 1. 18. Jer. 3. 1. 12. 13, 14, &c. and in the Law sacrifices were daily offered, not onely for ignorance, Levit. 5. 15. 17. but finnes committed willingly, and against conscience, Levit. 6. 1. 2. 3. wee are commanded daily to pray for remission of

finnes

sinnes without exception, Luke 11. 4. no sinne is unpardonable, but the sinne against the holy Ghost, Matth. 12. 3. 13. 2. Marke 3. 28, 29. from which a man that sinnes grossely after repentance may bee free. God is able to heale the later wound which sinne makes as well as the former; Hos. 14. 4. without Christ no offence can be forgiven, and in Christ all offences may be done away, 1 Ioh. 1. 7. Mercy in us is as a drop of a bucket, in comparison of that infinite sea of mercy which is in God: if by his commandement man must forgive his brother seventy times seven times, will not hee forgive them that humble themselves before him? Mat. 18. 11. 22.

*Q. What priviledges doe the godly enjoy as soone as this life is ended?*

*A. Their glory then begins; for their bodies remaine <sup>22</sup> in the sgrave, as in a bed of spices; and their soules being perfectly freed <sup>23</sup> from sinne are received into heaven, to the beholding <sup>h</sup> of God and Christ immediately. f 1 Thes. 4. 15. g Revel. 14. 13. h Matt. 5. 8. I Cor. 13. 12.*

*Expos. 22. Death separates the soule from the body, but it doth not separate*

the soule or body of the godly from Christ, Rom. 8. 38. 39. 1 Cor. 3. 22. and 15. 54. 55. 56. Phil. 1. 21. when the body lyeth in the grave, and is dissolved into dust, it is yet united unto Christ. Ioh. 15. 5. Eph. 5. 30. and doth expect and looke for a future and glorious change. 1 Cor. 15. 38. 42. 43. 44.

23. From the guilt and dominion of sinne, the godly are delivered in this life, 1. Ioh. 1. 9. not from all staine thereof; but after this earthly tabernacle is laid down they are delivered from all sinne, sorrow, and care, Rev. 21. 4. 27. and are received into heave to bee with Christ, injoying the glorious presence of God. 1 Thess. 4. 16. 17. seeing him not by faith obscurely, 2 Cor. 5. 7. as it were thorow a glasse, 1 Cor. 13. 12. as the Saints doe in this life, but by sight, and face to face, immediatly, or without meanes. Psal. 17.

15.

*Q. If this be the state of the Godly, what shall become of the ungodly?*

*A. Their bodies shall rot in the grave, and their soules are iudged unto eberlasting woe, i Gen, 3. 19. k Luk. 16 22. 23.*

*Expos.*

*Expos.* 24. Death is a curse to the wicked, Gal. 3. 10. 13. with Ioh. 3. 16. and so is their rotting in the grave, because they are not in Christ, 2. Cor. 5. 17. though to the senses there is nothing befalls the bodies of the wicked, which befallerth not the bodies of the godly, Eccle. 9. 2. The wicked shall indeed rise againe, but it is to further condemnation, Ioh. 5. 29.

*Q.* When shall the happinesse of the elect be consummate?

*A.* At the dreadfull day<sup>25</sup> of iudgement, and the generall resurrection, Psa: 17. 15.

*Expos.* 25. The soule in heaven doth retain a naturall desire to be united to the bodie, neither can the happinesse of the soule be every way compleate and perfect without it: of the happinesse of the elect there bee three degrees; one at their first conversion, Matth. 5. 3. 4. 5. Psal. 32. 1. 2. the second at death, Apoc. 14. 13. the last and most perfect at the day of iudgement, 1 Theff. 4. 17.

*Q.* Who shall be judge at that day?

*A.* Christ<sup>26</sup> the Lord and king of the Church, who shall come in a most glorious

rious and visible manner in descending from heaven with a shout, and with the voyce of the Archangell, and with the trumpet of God, most royally attended with innumerable multitudes of mighty Angels 1 Act. 10. 42. and 17. 30. *m.* 1 Thes. 4. 16. *n.* 2 Thes. 1. 7.

*Expos.* 26. The decree of iudging and iudicarie power, is common to Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, Gen. 18. 25. but the visible act, promulgation, and execution of iudgement belongeth to Christ our Mediatour, as God and man; Act. 17. 13. Ioh. 5. 22. 23. Rom. 14. 10. 11. 12. who being iudged at his first comming to worke our redemption, shall at his second appearing come to iudge, this being the last act, and accomplishment of his kingly office, 1 Cor. 15. 25, 26, 27.

*Q.* When shall Christ come to iudgement?

*An.* He will most surely come, but the time is unknowne, that we might ever watch, and prepare for his comming  
 o Math. 24. 36. p verse 42.

*Q.* Whom will he iudge?

*An.* His elect and chosen, and all their enemies, both evil angells and wicked

wicked men, q 2 Cor. 5. 10. r 2 Pet. 2. 4.  
Iude 6.

*Q* Seeing many of Gods elect people,  
and wicked men are rotted in their graves,  
how can they be judged?

*A.* The very same bodies <sup>27</sup> that at  
any time died, shall by the power of God  
be raised up, and their soules be united  
to them, inseparably to abide together  
for ever more. 1 Cor. 15. 42. 43. 44.

*Expos.* 27. Iustice requireth, that the  
same bodies which joynd with the  
soule, in working good or evill in this  
life, should bee raised up to share with  
the soule at the day of the Lord, Rom.  
2. 5. 6.

*Q.* What are we to beleeeve concerning  
those who shall be found alive at the com-  
ming of Christ?

*An.* They shall bee <sup>c</sup> changed in the  
twinckling of an eye, and so presented  
before <sup>28</sup> the iudgement seat of Christ.  
1 Cor. 15. 52.

*Expos.* 28. The meanes whereby quick  
and dead shall be gathered to iudgement,  
are the powerfull voyce of Christ, Ioh. 5.  
28. and the ministerie of Angels: Mar. 13.  
40. 41. the brute and senselesse creatures  
surren-

surrendring up their dead. Rev. 20. 13?

*Q.* In what manner shall hee judge them?

*A.* Most strictly, both in respect of the persons iudged, and the things for which, but yet he shall iudge most v<sup>r</sup>righteous iudgement, v<sup>r</sup>Cor. 5. 10. v<sup>r</sup>Act. 17. 3.

*Expos.* 29. Every man must appeare in his owne person before the iudge, Rom. 14. 12. Rev. 20. 12. and give an account both generally as a man, or a Christian, and specially as a Magistrate, Minister, Master, Servant, &c. for all the things which he hath received of the Lord, and for all the things which he hath done; even all thoughts, words, and actions, Job. 34. 11. Psal. 62, 12. Prov. 24. 12. Ezek. 33. 20. Rom. 2. 6. 2 Cor. 5. 10. 11. 1 Pet. 1. 17. Apoc. 32. 12. we should therefore be conscionable, patient, and watchfull, taking care that all our actions here be approved by the word of God, 1 Thess. 4. 18. 2 Pet. 3. 11. 14.

*Q.* What shall be the issue of this judgement to the wicked?

*An.* Everlasting <sup>x</sup> perdition from the presence of the Lord, to all those who ignorantly or willfully contemne the  
the

with an Exposition upon the same. 241

e Gospell. x 2 Theff. 1. 7. 8. 9.

Q. What shall be the issue hereof to the  
dly?

A. Cleare vision of y<sup>e</sup> God & Christ,  
idelle & communion with them, ever  
lasting a peace and gloz<sup>y</sup>, both in soule &  
body, in fuller measure than the heart  
of man can now apprehend, or any of the  
Saints enjoyed befoze, y<sup>e</sup> 1 Ioh. 3. 2. & Io.  
17. 24. Phil. 1. 23. & Matth. 25. 34.

Expos. 30. Spirituall or supernaturall  
blessednesse of the Saints, is the immedi-  
ate fruition of the chiefe, perfect, suffi-  
cient, and unchangeable good, even God  
in Christ, Matth. 5. 8. with 19. 17. 1 Theff.  
4. 17, Matth. 25. 34. who of his meere  
goodnesse doth give himselfe  
Elect, to be seene, and possessed,  
that is, to be enjoyed, by them. The means  
by which God is enjoyed, is the under-  
standing, will and affections; the minde  
clearly and immediately beholding God  
in Christ, and his exceeding glory and  
goodnesse, as it were face to face, Exod. 33.  
10. 1 Cor. 13. 12. 2 Cor. 5. 6. 7. 1 Ioh. 3. 2.  
and the will with as great love and ioy,  
embracing that infinite good, as there is  
knowledge thereof in the minde, Rev, 19.  
3. 4.

3.4. The Saints in glory doe not absolute-  
 see God as he is himselfe : for that which  
 is infinite cannot bee comprehended  
 that which is limited ; but God doth ma-  
 nifest himselfe unto them, so far forth as  
 creature is capable for to know him. Ps. 1  
 15. And to the end that the Saints shoul-  
 be fully contented, & not wax dull at the  
 glory of so great a light; God doth perfect  
 the powers of the soule, perfectly repair  
 his image in his Elect, & by his power en-  
 large the capacity of the soule, so far as the  
 nature of man will beare, 1 Ioh. 3. 2. that  
 it might alwayes be fully satisfied with the  
 beholding of him, and that without wear-  
 nesse at any time, Psal. 17. 15.

3.5. The subject of happines is the whole  
 man. Rev. 206. and therefore in the  
 estate of beatitude, the bodie is united to  
 the soule; and laying aside corruption and  
 mortality, is changed to an incorruptible  
 immortall and spirituall body, like to the  
 glorified body of Christ our Saviour,  
 Cor. 15. 41. 42, 43. 1 Ioh. 3. 3. whence fol-  
 loweth perfection of the whole man, con-  
 formity with God, unspeakable ioy, and  
 endless glory, Rev. 22. 5.

**F I N I S**







